

Gc
929.2
Si57806s
1925966

M. E.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01329 3912

THE GENEALOGY

OF THE

SIMS FAMILY

OF

VA. VIRGINIA, THE CAROLINAS AND 9
THE GULF STATES

By

Henry Upson Sims, LL.D.

of

Birmingham, Alabama

Printed Privately for the Author

by

E. L. MENDENHALL, INC.

KANSAS CITY, MO.

Only Thirty Copies

PUBLIC LIBRARY

BIRMINGHAM, ALA.

ARTIST

ALL MY SINGING LESSONS

Somebody

1925966

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

To My Son

HENRY GRAHAM SIMS

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

Somebody

ALMA LUNA DE LUNA (THE LUNA LUNA)

Somebody

Somebody

1825

1825

1825

INDEX

ANTIGUA	26, 27
Act of, concerning marriage.....	36
Symes family in.....	28
Arms borne by Symes and allied families.....	235
Black, William H.....	131
Booker family.....	165
Boswell, Amanda Sims.....	170
Children of.....	171
Bullock genealogy	149
Bullock, Richard, in St. Paul's Parish.....	144
Children of.....	150
Wife, Ann Hendley.....	145
Will of.....	144, 225
Calendar Year began March 25th.....	115
Cotten, Bruce.....	178
Cotten, Hallie Southall.....	178
Cummins, Rev. Francis.....	167
Statement as to Mecklenburg Declaration.....	168
deVeuve family.....	169, 170
Everard, Thomas, and family.....	30
Arms	237
Dorothy, marriage of.....	34
Gee, Dr. Wilson.....	121
Hannah, Carrie Burnet.....	171
Hening's Statutes, tythe laws in.....	16n, 20n
Henley, Leonard.....	149
Horner, Thomas.....	74
Judd, Edith Royster.....	174
Langton, Elizabeth, will of.....	69, 70, 215
Matthews, and Matthew families	17, 48
Moore family.....	164
Morris, Jane Davidson.....	98
Morton, Rev. Ernest Sims.....	168
Morton, Lillia Lynn.....	168
Popham, Sir John, Lord Chief Justice.....	75
Arms of.....	237

Processioning explained	20
In St. Paul's Vestry Book	86-89, 106-108
Rice, Rev. David, Memoir of	102
Rice, Mary	101
Rice, Thomas	102-4
Richardson, Maj. Richard	149
Saint Paul's Vestry Book Processionings	86-89, 106-108
Sherwood, Grace, Case of	83n
Sims, Alexander	135
Sims, Alice Graham	167, 168
Sims, Amanda Swepston	170
Sims, Captain Charles	119
Sims, Edward, Sr., and his descendants	132
Sims, Edward, Sr., grants to	105
Sims, Edward, of Bute County, N. C.	135
Sims, Edward, son of John	105
Sims, Elisha, Sr.	153
Married daughter of John Howard	154
Children of	152-156
No will or administration	159
Sergeant in North Carolina Militia	160
Sims, Elisha, Jr., Letter of	157
Sims Family Chart	118
Sims, Ferdinand	169
Sims, George, and his descendants	123-131
Deed from, to John Walton	125
Sims, George, Revolutionary address of	97
Sims, Frederick W.	138
Sims, Henry Graham	168
Sims, Henry Upson	167
Sims, James, and his descendants	138
Sims, James, of Pittsylvania	138
Sims, Dr. James Marion	182-187
Sims, Dr. James Saunders	163, 164
Sims, John, of Isle of Wight County, 1678	13
Sims, John, Matthew and George	24
Sims, John, Matthew, George and Edward	81
Sims, John, of Hanover	100
Grants to	104
Sims, John of Hanover and Mary Rice, descendants of	142

Sims, John, Jr.....	109
Married Sarah Bullock.....	109, 143
Children of.....	150
Hanover grant to.....	143
Will of.....	109, 228
Sims, Leonard	174
Children of.....	176
Will of.....	176
Sims, Louisa Upson.....	166, 167
Sims, Lucien Mortimer.....	180
Sims, Mary, wife of Alex Sneed.....	51
Sims, Matthew, descendants of.....	114
Sims, Matthew, Jr., descendants of.....	117
Sims, Micajah	110, 179
Children, and descendants of.....	179-181
Sims, Robert of Nansemond.....	14
Sims, Sarah A. Mitchell.....	168
Sims, Sherwood or Sherrod.....	111, 135, 182
Sims, Susan	173
Children of.....	173
Memorial of.....	173, 233
Sims, Thomas and wife, Rebecca Harrelson.....	12
Sims, William, son of Adam.....	93
Note of.....	94
Sims, William of Warren County, N. C.....	151
Sims, William of Warren County, N. C., Children of.....	153
Sims, William Henry, grad. West Point.....	163
Sims, William Henry, of Mississippi.....	165
Sims, Virginia grants to, listed.....	223
Sims, Zachariah	160
Moved to Georgia.....	161
Georgia Legislative Acts, as to.....	162
Children of.....	163
Skelton, Attorney for George Symes.....	21
Will of.....	23
Syme family distinguished.....	6
Symes, Adam	81
His descendants.....	90
Symes, Rev. Charles.....	67
Symes, Edward of Daventry, Arms of.....	54

Symes, Edward of Somerset.....	66
Symes, Elizabeth	21, 22
Symes, George of Antigua, ancestry of.....	53
Genealogy of.....	212
Will of.....	29
Symes, George, immigrant in 1653	9
Symes, George, immigrant in 1687.....	15
Came from Antigua	44
Head taxes on.....	16
Power of attorney.....	21
Suit dismissed in 1711.....	24
Symes, George, grant of 3,000 acres to.....	80, 105
Children of.....	80
Symes, George and John on Quit Rent Rolls.....	20
Symes, Henry of Antigua.....	68
Symes, James of Isle of Wight County, 1674.....	13
Symes, John of Poundsford.....	58
Symes, John of Montserrat.....	66
Symes, Thomas of Barwick	62
His children.....	63-65
Symes, William, 1677.....	10, 11, 12
Symes, William of Chard.....	54, 55, 57, 236
Will of.....	58
Symes, William of New Kent County.....	68
Symes vs. Vernon, suit in English Chancery.....	39, 189-211
Syms, Benjamin.....	7
Terry, Robert C.....	172
Terry, Robert J.....	172
Upson, Francis L.	167
Worthington Family.....	168

PREFACE.

This genealogy began some fifteen years ago as a mere family chart, and as the result of extended research, has become an essay, primarily genealogical, but to a considerable extent historical. A search to identify the first American Sims ancestor of the family, led to conclusive circumstantial evidence that he came to Virginia from the Island of Antigua, and a search into the history of that island connected him directly with the Somerset Symes family in Seventeenth Century England. And that opened up much of the history of early Virginia.

He was also a descendant of Lord Chief Justice Popham, one of the patrons of the company that settled Jamestown, and whose brother George Popham endeavored at the same time (1606) to settle New England; and died there.

The Author acknowledges the cooperative help of Mrs. Jane Morris, of Little Rock, author of *Adam Symes and His Descendants* (Phila., Dorrance & Co., 1938), of Dr. Wilson Gee, of the University of Virginia, of William H. Black, Esq., of Chicago, of Bruce Cotten, Esq. of Baltimore, of Lucien Mortimer Sims, Esq., of Louisa, Virginia, and of Mrs. Zebulon Judd, of Auburn, Alabama, all of whom, like the Author, are descended from the same first Sims immigrant.

The Author has been assisted also by William H. Bason, Esq., of Raleigh, and in addition to his own researches, valuable researches have been made for him by Mrs. N. F. Porter, of Richmond, by Miss Jeanette Biggs, of Oxford, N. C., by Mrs. L. L. Chapman, of Smithville, Virginia, and by R. A. Edwards, Esq., of Isle of Wight, Va.

•

The Author also acknowledges great indebtedness to Duncan Campbell Lee, Esq., of the Middle Temple, London, and his Secretary, Miss Evelyn Banyard, for locating and having photostated the original papers in the suit of *Symes v. Vernon*, in the Record Office in London, and of Miss Bessie Harper of St. John's, Antigua, who searched the island records for what she could find to supplement Oliver's History of Antigua.

Henry Upson Sims.

Birmingham, Alabama.

August, 1940.

INTRODUCTION

The Symes family of Somersetshire, like other English county families which became established during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, accumulated considerable wealth from merchandising, and the acquisition of lands and manors. The second and third generation of the Symes family intermarried, as we shall see, with the Horner family of Somersetshire, which has been accused of profiting along with many others in favor with the Crown when Henry VIII, with the assistance of Parliament, abolished the monasteries in 1536. Rev. William Hunt, the historian of the Church of England, writing on the Church in the eleventh edition of *Encyclopedia Britannica* (Vol. IX, p. 47), says: "By breaking the bonds of Rome Henry did not give the church freedom, he substituted a single despotism for the dual authority which pope and king had previously exercised over it. In 1535 Cromwell, the king's vicar-general, began a visitation of the monasteries. The reports of his commissioners having been delivered to the king and communicated to parliament in 1536, parliament declared the smaller monasteries corrupt, and granted the king all of less value than £200 a year. * * * The suppression of the greater houses was effected gradually, surrenders were obtained by pressure, and three abbots who were reluctant to give up the possessions of their convents for confiscation, were hanged. Monastic shrines and treasures were sacked and the spoil sent to the king, to whom parliament granted all the houses, their lands and possessions. Of the enormous wealth thus gained Henry spent a part on national defence, a little on the foundation of the bishoprics of Westminster, dissolved in 1550, Bristol, Chester,

Gloucester, Oxford and Peterborough, and gave the lands to men either useful to or favored by himself, or sold them to rich purchasers."

William Symes' son and heir John Symes, a member of parliament in the time of Elizabeth, and a sheriff of Somersetshire, married the daughter of Thomas Horner, also a member of parliament, and a sheriff of Somersetshire; and the son of Thomas Horner, who became a knight, as Sir John Horner, was probably the "Little Jack Horner" of Mother Goose fame, the rhyme being a sarcasm referring to the family having obtained lands formerly held by the Abbot of Glastonbury.*

Moreover, William Symes' will shows that he had land transactions with Chief Justice Popham, who was Thomas Horner's father-in-law, and who died leaving much wealth, although his memory is not connected with the rifling of the monasteries.

But like other English families of that day, the family of William Symes was large; and his many sons and grandsons could not each inherit much wealth. Apparently William's grandson Thomas, the third son of John, left no notable riches for his eight sons and four daughters; and so the sons sought rich wives, or resorted to adventure for their welfare.

The oldest married a daughter of Sir John Horner, and seems to have acquired wealth. The second, fifth and sixth sons went to the West Indies, as we shall see. The third cannot be located, unless he also went to the West Indies. The fourth went into the church. The eighth seems also to have married well; but the seventh went to Virginia, preceded a few years by the oldest son of the fifth, which latter, as we shall see, went to Virginia from Antigua.

*The author obtained this rumor from the editors of Burke's *Colonial Gentry*, 1939 edition.

The greatest problem in tracing the genealogy of all American families except those whose first representative coming to America was an historical character, like William Penn, or Sir William Berkeley, or Jerome Bonaparte, for examples, is to identify positively the family in England, Scotland, or France from which the first American settler sprang, and to identify the emigrant's parents in the old country—in short to carry the line across the Atlantic to its connection on the other side.

Of course family tradition helps to accomplish this. But family tradition is not to be completely relied upon. The slightest twist of a great-grandfather's memory, when writing his family story for his grandchildren, will start the family history in the wrong way and make endless hours of study for the truth-searching student. Even bible entries are fruitful of error. If made at the time of the respective births, marriages, and deaths, they are irrefutable. But not infrequently they are made in the second generation or the third generation after the event, in an effort to fill in gaps; and then of course they are mere statements of tradition, and are even worse than traditions coming down several generations orally, because they are given more weight.

There are two sources in England to which American Simses may be traced, another in Scotland, and another in Ireland. And each of the four sources probably has scions in America. The Sims family which started its American life in Massachusetts with the emigrant, Rev. Zachariah Symmes, and most of whose descendants cling to the old spelling of Symmes, are traceable, as their genealogist, James Adam Vinton, believed, to Northamptonshire, England.¹ Rev. Zachariah had a

¹Memoir of the Rev. Zachariah Symmes, by James Adam Vinton, David Clapp & Son, 1873, Appendix I, p. 157.

brother, William, and their father was named William. But Lady Jane Pole, a daughter of William Symmes of Chard² the founder of the Somersetshire Symes family, seems to have had two brothers William and Zachary.³ Yet no Zachary appears in the Somersetshire Symes pedigree in the Harleian Publications.

The genealogy of the New Jersey Sims family which obtained the "Simms Grant" on the Ohio River, on which Cincinnati was founded, shows that the first American Sims of that line came to New Jersey from Scotland, and that the name was Sym at that time. Admiral William S. Sims in charge of the American fleet at the time of the Great War, seems to come from that New Jersey family (although he himself was born in Canada, as shown by biographical data in the volumes of "Who's Who in America" published prior to his death). An elaborately worked-out family chart of his line will be found in large libraries, and appears to have been carefully compiled.

The spelling of the name is not entirely significant. Vinton says that the Scotch Symes Family went thither from England about the time of the Wars of the Roses, in the Fifteenth Century; and Sir Alexander Nesbit's collection of Scottish crests contains for Symes the same crest as that granted by Cooke to Edward Symmes of Daventry, Northamptonshire, in 1592.⁴

²See the pedigrees of the Pole Family, in "Visitation of Devonshire," Vol. 6 of Harleian Publications, p. 214.

³From "Genealogical Gleanings in England," Vol. 1, p. 281, it appears that one Timothy St. Nicholas, at his death, was trustee for "Zachary and William Sims," sons of William Sims, who had a daughter Jane, married to Sir William Pole. Lady Jane Pole's will, dated August 29, 1653, probated June 10, 1654, does not mention them, however.

⁴See "Grantees of Arms to the end of the XVII Century, 'Named in Docquets' & Patents in the Manuscripts preserved in the British Museum, the Bodleian" &c.

"Alphabetically arranged by the late Joseph Foster and contained in the additional Ms. No. 37,147, in the British Museum."

The Syme family of Virginia was also a Scotch family before the First John Syme came to America. Col. John Syme, as he was called, was quite active from his first coming over, about 1710, until his death in 1732, and accumulated a large fortune in lands and slaves. From the Journals of the Virginia Executive Council, it appears that he was Official Surveyor of New Kent County on July 20, 1720, and acquired more than fifteen thousand acres of land.⁵ He was a member of the House of Burgesses from Hanover County from 1720 to 1722, and again from 1727 until his death.⁶ He married Sarah Winston, step-daughter of Nicholas Merriwether, with whom he sat in the House. Sarah Winston had but one child by him. "Captain" John Syme, who inherited and preserved his fortune, and also sat in the House of Burgesses from Hanover County for many years.

After Col. John Syme's death, his widow, the former Sarah Winston, married Colonel Henry and had several other children, including the celebrated Patrick Henry, whose first terms in the House of Burgesses were in company with his half-brother, Captain John Syme.

Edited by W. Harry Rylands, F.S.A. London, 1915. Page 248 shows "Symes, William, of Chard, Somt. (6 Aug.) 1591, by Cooke, Harl. Mss. 1422, fo. 15b and 5887, fo. 82, azure, three escallops in pale, or; Stowe Ms. 650, fo. 55." It also shows, Symms, Edward, of Daventry, Northts. granted 1592, by Cooke, Harl. Mss. 1359, fo. 1422, fo. 95, Gen'l, 91; Add. Ms. 4966, fo. 85b.

The actual arms granted to Edward Symms of the Daventry Symms family were omitted in the manuscript of which the above publication is a reproduction; but the Harleian Manuscript in the British Museum was examined by the author of this essay in 1923 and it showed a sketch of both arms and crest, described in the terms of heraldry as "Ermine, three increscents, gules, with an additional crescent for difference" thus showing that Edward was a younger son, and that the arms were probably old at the time.

There was also a crest, "a head in armor, face proper, the visor up."

⁵Vol. III, p. 463, *ibid*, p. 540.

⁶Journals of the House of Burgesses, Vol. 1712-26, p. 321; same for 1727-1740, p. 119.

Vinton says, in his Memoir of the Reverend Zachariah Symmes, that the Symmes Family of Northamptonshire is probably the oldest family, and that the Symes Family of Somersetshire was probably a branch; which may well be true. But the branching was made, if at all, away back in the Fourteenth Century, or during the early part of the Fifteenth Century, as both the branches were very large and prolific by the middle of the Sixteenth Century; and it is impossible from the church registers which have been preserved to connect the various branches in each locality, without attempting to connect the Somersetshire branch and the Northamptonshire branch into one family or group as a whole.

The Somersetshire branch again divided into a Gloucestershire branch, a Yorkshire branch and a Dorsetshire branch; and many individuals, probably from each branch, worked their way down to the city of London, where their origins became lost; so that it is with the greatest difficulty that any London Symes who came to America can be identified with any of the original or near original branches.

They all came, however, from what are called the old "County families"; and except where their individual fortunes became decimated, the men added the word "esquire" to their names, and were referred to in the records as "gentlemen."

CHAPTER I.

SIMSES IN EARLY VIRGINIA.

Benjamin Syms. The earliest bearer of the Sims name in Virginia, or anywhere else in America, so far as any record shows, was Benjamin Syms. He is listed in "Hotten's List of Emigrants of Quality" (p. 184) as living in Basse's Choyce, on February 16, 1623, and is listed again as living there in 1624-5 (p. 242). Basse's Choyce was a settlement located by historians somewhere above Jamestown Island in James City County, and has long since disappeared. Whether Benjamin Syms was in Virginia at the time of the great Indian Massacre, the preceding year, 1622, is not known; but he went back and forth to England at least once. He was in the Principal Probate of London, p. 11; and he again came to Virginia on the ship, "Thomas" in 1635, being so listed by Hotten on p. 126.

His wife's name was Margaret, and she is said by Hotten (p. 243) to have been dead in Wariscayack, in Virginia, in 1624. The couple died childless, which history may well regret, as Benjamin Syms deserves recognition among the never to be forgotten early Americans. He established the first free school in America. Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, in Volume 1, p. 345 of Virginia Cyclopaedia of Biographies, says that Benjamin Syms was born in 1580, and in his will, dated February 12, 1635, he gave two hundred acres of land and eight cows, with their increase, to support the school for the poor scholars of the district of Elizabeth and Kitquotan;¹ and W. G. Stanard says that it was established in 1632.² But that it existed prior to the execution of Syms'

¹See also Institutional History of Virginia, by Philip Alex. Bruce, Vol. 1, p. 350.

²Vol. 2 Va. Historical Mag., p. 419, Vol. 6, Ibid., p. 93.

will, is improbable. A statute confirming the establishment of the school may be found in 1643,³ and another later;⁴ and there are several references to the foundation in the Journals of the House of Burgesses.⁵

The Virginians have treated this first American educational establishment with singular indifference. Indeed they seem willing to yield to Massachusetts the honor of having the first and oldest educational foundation in America, namely, Harvard, though not founded until 1636. The Virginians seem content to have William and Mary College recognized as the second American educational foundation, though not established until some fifty years later than Harvard. It is hard to understand this Virginian attitude. In 6 Wm. & Mary Quarterly, p. 73, Benjamin Syms is referred to as "evidently an honest, religious and childless planter." The Virginians seem prouder of carrying out the charter authority to set up an institute of learning, later realized in William and Mary College. No wonder Massachusetts has established its claim to historical precedence.

The Syms school still survives in the Hampton Academy in Elizabeth City County, near Hopewell, Virginia.⁶

From what branch of the Sims family Benjamin Syms came is not known. He evidently sprang from some member of the family which moved to London, and concealed its origin by so doing.

Alexander Syms. A youth of 19, by that name, is listed by Hotten (p. 138) as having sailed from London

³1 Hening's Stats. p. 252, March 1642-3.

⁴6 Hening, p. 389.

⁵Vol. for 1752-8, pp. 139, 155, 159, and following, listed in the index.

⁶For a detailed history of Benjamin Syms' institution see "The Syms-Eaton Free School," compiled by Mrs. F. M. Armstrong, of Hampton, Virginia.

to Virginia in 1635, in the Ship, "Abraham." Nothing is later recorded of him. An Alexander Simms left a will, in Westmoreland County, Virginia, dated June 26, 1744, and probated October 29, 1745, which will be discussed later. But of course the lapse of one hundred and ten years is too great to signify the descent of the latter person from the youth who came to Virginia in 1635.

Symon Simes. A youth, fifteen years of age, by this name is also listed by Hotten (p. 104) as coming to Virginia in 1635; but his name appears in no other record.

Andrew Sims. Greer's "Early Virginia Immigrants" (alphabetical) lists Andrew Sims as having been brought to Accomac County, Virginia, in 1635, by William Andrews. Nothing more seems to have been heard of him.

John Simmes. In Mrs. Nell M. Nugent's "Cavaliers and Pioneers," Volume 1, Virginia Land Grants and Patents, p. 337, one John Symmes is named as having been brought to Westmoreland County, Virginia, in 1651, by Herbert Smith, fifty acres of land having been obtained from the Colony, on that account. A John Sims is again listed as having been brought in 1663. But it may have been the same John Sims. Histories show that there was a great irregularity in the issue of grants for bringing in immigrants, the fifty acres allowable for each immigrant being often obtained dishonestly by using the name of the same immigrant on more than one list.

George Symes. Greer's Almanac list one Geo. Gymes as having been brought over to York County, Virginia, by Joseph Croshaw in 1653; and as the G and the S in the script of the Seventeenth Century were

very much alike, it may be assumed that Geo. Gymses was a misreading by the transcribers of the records for Geo. Symes. This is borne out by the record of a will of George Sims to be found in Will Book 3, p. 89, in York County, the will being dated 6, 19, 1658, probated 6, 24, 1659, though apparently not indexed. This will of George Sims names his son John and leaves him property, and refers to his wife and other children without naming them. If George came over unmarried, as he probably did, being a bonded servant no doubt, he must have married about 1655, and died leaving about three children. But the only later record which fits George and his son John is of a law suit by one John Sims, plaintiff, in York County, in Order Book, 1694-97, p. 335. On January 26, 1696, Mrs. Anne Minnis, admx. of Charles Minnis, deceased, by the attorney, Edward Moss, confessed judgment to John Sims (Ccooper) for five pounds and costs.

This John Sims may well have been the John, son of George Sims, mentioned in George's will of 1658. But that is all that fits the facts. We don't know what became of John of York after that entry.

William Syms. Mrs. Nugent also lists one William Syms as brought to Virginia in 1658 (p. 368) by Robert Younge, as among six immigrants used by him to acquire 710 acres in Rappahannock County; and again, on p. 388, by Anthony Stephens. Nothing more is found of that William Syms. But Geo. Brent included a Wm. Sims among his immigrants on Nov. 6, 1677. See Va. Land Book, Vol. 6, p. 226, and Va. Hist. Mag., Vol. 18, p. 226. This seems to have been land in Westmoreland County, as we shall see later.

In "Bristol and America, Servants to Foreign Plantations, a record of first settlers"; "London: 1929, R. S. Glover, Publisher," a special subscription publication

with the paging of the original shipping entries, and the paging of the original publication, appear the following Sims men and women as having shipped for Virginia. Vol. I, extending from 1654 to 1660:

p. 92. Samuell Simms, destination, Virginia.

p. 93. Joane Simms, destination, Virginia.

Vol. II, extending from 1665 to 1679:

p. 122. Edith Symms, Edith Symms, Jr., destination, Virginia.

Nothing more is known of those four persons.

Richard Sims, of Salisbury, is also listed in Volume 1, p. 492, old paging, 93 new, without his destination being given; and he must have gone to Rappahannock County, Virginia; for one Richard Sims was in that County in 1668, and in Lancaster County in 1671, and he sold lands in those counties in Virginia in those years. See notes from the private library of Judge Embury of Richmond, made by Mrs. N. F. Porter for the author of this history. The will of this Richard Sims from Essex County (formerly Rappahannock), shows that he died childless.⁷

Thomas Symes is also listed in Greer's Almanac as having been brought to.....County, Virginia, in 1653. A will of Thomas Sims was probated in Northampton County, Virginia, in 1695, mentioning only a son-in-law. Evidently he left no son.

Robert Sims. One by that name left a will in Accomac County, Virginia, in 1667, and apparently he died childless.

William Sims, of Rappahannock County.

William Sims was brought to Virginia by George Brent, with twenty-six others, about 1677; for on No-

⁷A copy of this will is in the author's files.

vember 6, 1677, Brent received a land grant of 1,391 acres in Westmoreland County, on a branch of the North fork of Little Hunting Creek. See Virginia Land Book, V. 6, p. 226. Virginia Hist. Mag., V. 18, for 1910, p. 226. The Brents of Virginia and Maryland were papists (Va. Hist. Mag., V. 14, for 1906-7, p. 95). They moved from Somersetshire, England, to Warwickshire in 1487. So that this William Sims must have been one of the Somerset Symes family. William Sims had land in Rappahannock County, now Essex County, Virginia, on May 14, 1686. See Mrs. N. F. Porter's Notes from Judge Embry's library. William Sims was constable in 1686, and died in Richmond County, Virginia, leaving a will dated April 28, 1716, recorded in Will Book, 3, p. 270. He left a minor son, Thomas Sims, and no other heirs. Who this William Sims was, it is impossible to say. He was not the William Symes who appeared in Virginia in New Kent County in 1698, with his four children. Nor was his son, Thomas, the Thomas Sims who married Rebecca, daughter of Paul Harrelson of St. Paul's Parish, New Kent County; for the will of Paul Harrelson, dated 8, 18, 1718, probated 1733 (See Vol. VI, Va. County Records, p. 19, Order Book for 1733, Hanover County. Birmingham Public Library), provided a slave for his grand-daughter Rebecca Sims. If Thomas was a minor with a guardian in April, 1716, he could hardly have married and had a daughter by August, 1718. The will of William Sims provided for tuition of his son Thomas until he should become twenty years old. He may have been the Thomas Sims who was presented by the Vestry of St. Peter's Parish in 1722, for travelling with a loaded beast on Sunday. 10 William and Mary Quarterly, 209, but he was hardly the Thomas who had a daughter in 1718. The latter Thomas Sims, and his wife, Rebecca Harrelson, lived in Rapidan in 1734, and had sons

Thomas, Peter, and William, besides the daughter Rebecca, above referred to.

James Symes. In Isle of Wight County Wills and Deeds, Book 1, p. 324, appears this entry:

"Whereas I James Symes [Sims in the Index] of Isle of Wight, planter, do owe unto Wm. Body of afsd. place, planter, 3200 lbs. of good tob. etc. I James Symes do make over to sd. Wm. Body my crop of tobacco, etc. Oct. 22, 1674 James Sims. Wits: James Peddlin, Thos. Roberts. Rec. Jan. 9, 1674 [5 ?]."

Who was this James Sims? He could not have been the son of the George Symes who died in York in 1659, as a son James could hardly have been born before 1656, the child, John, having been mentioned as no doubt the oldest. If James was not born until 1656, he could hardly have been a planter owing 3,200 pounds of tobacco to another planter, when so young as eighteen years of age. So we cannot tell where James came from.

But at any rate this James Symes must have died between 1674 and 1678, leaving at least three sons. In Isle of Wight Deed Book 2, p. 160, is the following entry:

"At an Orphants Court held for the Isle of Wight the.....of May 1678 ordered that John Sims do live with Robert Smith until he be 18 years of age, whom the court do now judge to be six years and a half old, he the said Robert Smith is to find the sd John Sims with a sufficient, Drink, Lodging, washing & apparell during the sd. time and if it shall so happen that Eady the now wife of the sd. Robert Smith should dye before the sd John Sims attained to ye age of 18 years afsd that he shall have the Liberty of chusing his Guardian."

There is no mention of John Sims in Robert Smith's will in August, 1678.

This child "John Sims," born about 1671, was probably the son of James Sims, as would appear from the following facts. Isle of Wight and Nansemond Counties adjoin for many miles. In 1694 a *Robert Sims* owned 250 acres of land in Nansemond County, under a patent dated April 20, 1694. See Virginia Land Office Records (in Richmond) Book 25, p. 21. See also Nansemond County records, Volume 8, p. 343.⁸ Robert was probably born in 1672 or 1673. Evidently he moved later some fifty or seventy-five miles Southward into Bertie County, North Carolina, where he died in 1729; for he left a will, probated at the February Court in Bertie County in 1729, to be found in the Bertie County Will Book for 1729, kept now in Raleigh, and abstracted in Grimm's Abstract of North Carolina Wills, p. 340; and this will names his sons, Robert, Thomas, and James, and made his brother John Sims his executor. He mentions no wife; but evidently she died before Robert, leaving three children, Robert, named for his father, Thomas, named probably for her father, and James for his grandfather James Symes of Isle of Wight.

This Robert and this James went back to Virginia, appearing later in Louisa County, Robert in 1744 (See the Valentine Papers, p. 2167), and James about the same time, Robert died in Louisa County, Virginia, leaving a will dated April 1748, and appearing in Will Book I of Louisa County, p. 4. He left a wife named Susanna and sons Robert and James. Robert the 3rd went to Brunswick, See Book A, p. 474, Louisa records, and James to Halifax, See Book C, p. 80, Louisa records. There was also a William who joined in the latter deed, probably a son of the older James, and who was then living in Louisa, January 10, 1761. So the child John of Isle of Wight six and a half years of age in

⁸See letter of Mrs. N. F. Porter to H. U. Sims, March 9, 1933.

1678, and George of Isle of Wight, whom we are about to take up, must have been related; but they could not have been brothers and sons of James of Isle of Wight, for reasons we shall soon set out.

George Symes of Isle of Wight. We now take up the only Symes whose line can be traced with convincing accuracy back to the Somersetshire Symes family. The name of George Symes appears first among those for whom tythes were paid in Lawnes Creek Parish, Surry County (formed partly from Isle of Wight), beginning with the year 1687. The listing covers the years 1687 to 1703, no lists being recorded after 1703.

As early as 1629, it was enacted in Virginia that "all those that worke in the ground of what qualities or conditions soever shall pay tythes to the ministers."⁹ Again it was enacted in 1643 "That all freemen that are hired servants shall pay their own tythes and duties are to be collected per pol for the country service."¹⁰ In 1661-2, it was made to apply to all male servants brought into the colony, except natives under sixteen and those under that age brought in without apprenticeship ar-

⁹1 Hening's Statutes, 144, Act 14, October, 1629, 5 Ch. 1.

¹⁰1 Hening's Statutes, 241, March 1642-3 18th Ch. 1. Again in 1 Hening's Statutes, 361, 1649, the first year of the "Commonwealth" after whereas clauses, it was enacted as follows:

"That all male servants imported hereafter into the collony of what age soever they shall be brought into the lists and shall be liable to pay county levies, excepting in this act such as are natives of this collony and such as are imported free, either by their parents or otherwise, who are exempted from leavies, being under said age of sixteen years;

"And be it further enacted 'That the lists be yearly taken by the 25th of June at the furthest and presented to the County Courts, and that the particular lists be given in under the hand of the masters of the several families, who are to pay tribble assessments for every person they give in short of their due number, and the ministers are to have tithes of all such as are now adjudged titheable."

ticles.¹¹ Later in 1680, 32 Charles II., an Act was passed which, although by its title purported to be "an Act ascertaining the time when negro children should be tytheable, which was set at twelve years, on adjudication of court, contained this last paragraph, "And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, and it is hereby enacted, that noe Christian servants imported into the colony shall be tytheable before they attain the age of fourteen years, any former law, usage, or custom to the contrary notwithstanding."¹²

Therefore as George Symes paid a head tax in 1687, he was at least fourteen years old, or was so adjudged by the court, if he was an indentured servant and he was at least sixteen or adjudged to be so old, if he was born in Virginia or came into the colony free and without apprenticeship articles.

George Sims is not listed as in the Surry County militia on August 24, 1687, organized on account of Bacon's Rebellion.¹³ So at that time George must have been too young to be a soldier, or he did not come to the locality until later in the year.

¹¹² Hening's Statutes, p. 83, Act LIII, 14th Charles II, 1661-2, provided that the master of every family shall send in under his hand before June 10 to the commissioner the names and number of titheables he has in his family, and the clerk of the County court shall return a list to the Clerk of the Assembly by 1st or 2nd day of every September general court. And Act LIV declared that, "All male persons of what age scever imported into the country shall be brought into the lystes and be lyable to the payment of all taxes," and all negroes and all Indian servants adjudged 16 years of age likewise; "but such Christians only as are either natives of this country or are imported by their parents or others who shall not be lyable to the payment of levyes until they be sixteen years of age, or such others as by particular Acts of Assembly are excepted."

An Act of 13th Charles II, 1660-1, 2 Hening's Statutes, 19 (Act IV) had divided each county into precincts, with a constable to each, to bring in the lists by June 10th each year, or pay double for the whole family.

¹²² Hening Statutes, 479, Act VII, June 1680, 32 Charles II.

¹³See 11 Wm. & Mary College Quarterly, 1st Series, pp. 80-81.

The name of George Sims appears in the head tax lists from Surry and Isle of Wight Counties as follows:

1687, p. 6. Robert Littleboy (or Littlebury) & George Sims, 2,

1688, p. 66. Thomas Mathers (Matthews) & Geor. Symes, 2,

1689, p. 127. Thomas Mathers & Geo. Symes, 2,

1690, p. 152. Phill Shelly & Geo. Sims, 2,

1691, Geo. Blow & Geo. Sims, 2,

1692, Robt. Savage & Geo. Simes, 2,

1693, (not noted)

1694 to 1703, both inclusive, Geo. Symes 1, except

1700 Geor. Symes & Edwd. Mathews, 2

It is not stated clearly in any statute prior to 1705 (4th Anne)¹⁴ that all adults were taxable; but it is implied in several of the Acts above cited, and such seems to have been accepted as law. But as George Symes seems not to be listed until 1687, he was adjudged to be either 14 or 16 years old that year, according to his condition of service or freedom. But as Robert Littlebury paid his tax in 1687, and Thomas Matthews the next two years, the fact of the change indicates that George was an indentured servant.

George must have been sixteen years old, or adjudged so by the Court; for as we shall see, Adam Symes must have been his first child born not later than 1690, at which time George could not have been under eighteen. But if he was eighteen in 1690, he was born in 1672, more likely in 1671; and if born in Surry or Isle of Wight County at either of those dates, he must have been a brother of the John Symes who was put with Robert Smith by the Orphan's Court in 1678, being then about six and a half years old, and in that case a son of James Symes whom we assumed

¹⁴ Hening Statutes, p. 258.

above to have been the father of the boy John, and dead in 1678.

But if George was the brother of John, and so near the same age, why was George not placed along with his brother in the care of Robert Smith by the same court proceeding?

Of course George would have been so placed, if he was in the care of the County authorities at that time or at least he would have been disposed of in the same court proceeding. And as George was not mentioned at all, it must be accepted that George Symes was imported into Virginia at about the age of sixteen in 1687, and indentured first to Robert Littlebury, and later to Thomas Matthews. Parenthetically, it may be remarked that where two persons are named jointly in the lists as having paid the tithes, as in the records above, it is construed that the first was the person who paid for both. At any rate "Robert Littlebury" is said to have been listed in.....as having been financially able to furnish and equip a horse and man for militia purposes,¹⁵ although nothing more is recorded of the Littlebury family in Virginia. It is said that the name appears nowhere else in Virginia records, except as a Christian name.¹⁶

Another reason for concluding that George Symes was not a brother of the child John Sims, though they were born about the same time, is that George was active in New Kent County later with a John Symes who lived in New Kent, in the part which later became Hanover, until at least 1743, in which year that John was acting as proccessioner for taxes, requiring him to traverse considerable territory. If he had been the John

¹⁵11 Wm. & Mary Quarterly, 1st Series, p. 84.

¹⁶5 Virginia Mag. of Biography & History, p. 83. Nor does the Littlebury name appear in Oliver's History of Antigua, the import of which will appear infra.

who was born in 1671, he would hardly have been doing such active civic work in 1743, when as old as seventy-two years. John of New Kent is therefore believed to have been the son of George Symes, and the one thousand acres which John Symes held in New Kent County in 1704, according to the Quit Rent Rolls for New Kent, when George held only two hundred acres in Surry County at the same time, are believed to have been purchased by George, and the patent or deed taken in the name of his thirteen or fourteen year old second son, John, in order to avoid the law of primogeniture, which obtained in Virginia at the time, and which would have made all George Symes' lands descend to his oldest son Adam, who was born as we shall see about 1689 in Surry County, and died there or in Brunswick County in 1733.

The federal armies, during and at the close of the War Between the States destroyed practically all the public records, along with the court houses in Surry County, Prince George County, New Kent County, and Hanover County, Virginia; so that only a few chance volumes of County records and a few parish registers remain extant. Copies of the original land grants were left untouched in the State Land Office in Richmond; but they begin comparatively late, about 1694, and the earlier so-called patents were very uncertain.

Philip A. Bruce, in his *Economic History of Virginia*, says that patents grew up without law, not being recognized by law until 1705.¹⁷ There is even doubt about the supposed custom that each indentured servant was entitled to fifty acres at the end of his service period.¹⁸ There was great corruption in the acquisition of land for head rights—the fifty acres granted by the original Virginia Company for each immigrant imported into the

¹⁷Vol. II, p. 526.

¹⁸Ibid, p. 43.

colony.¹⁹ So that with practically no remaining county records of transfers in the counties abovenamed, no wonder family migrations are almost untraceable.

The Quit Rent Rolls exist for all the organized counties for 1704, or for a few counties for 1705, one year only; and beginning in 1708, the system of "proceSSIONING" the lands by parishes for taxes seems to have been set up.²⁰ This "proceSSIONING" is explained by Mr. Bruce as being a tracing out of the lines of the occupied homesteads, to straighten out the confusion caused by over-lapping original patents or grants.²¹ Reliable citizens in pairs were assigned the duty of proceSSIONING the lands of some eight or ten planters to the next vestry meeting. This was done every two or four years.

George "Sims," then, had 200 acres of land in Surry County in 1704²² and John "Sims" had 1,000 acres in New Kent County;²³ and there is no early land record to throw light on the problem of their relationship or their connection. But in Deed Book 1, p. 260, of Isle of Wight records appears a power of attorney executed by George Symes to John Skelton, dated August 9, 1698, in the following language:

"Know all men by these presents that I George Symes have made ordained and constituted and by these presents do for me my heirs, Executors and Administrators make ordain and constitute John Skelton of Virginia, Blacksmith, my true and lawfull At-

¹⁹Id. Vol. I, p. 519, et seq.

²⁰3 Hening's Statutes, p. 325, Act of 1705, to be done once every four years. An Act of March 1661-2, 2 Hening Statutes, p. 101, required all the citizens to go in procession once every four years to see that every one's lands were properly surveyed and bounded.

²¹Economic History of Virginia, by Philip A. Bruce, Vol. 1, p. 532.

²²29 Va. Mag. of History & Biog., p. 25.

²³31 Id., p. 227.

torney for me and in my name, to ask, demand, levy, recover and receive of and from all persons wh-sover all and manner of debts, dues, and demands, whatsoever to me due and owing and upon non payment to sue for ye same in Court or Courts whatsoever and to imprison at his will and pleasure, and into prison to comitt or out of prison to deliver, and to give any release or releases or to compound to his will and pleasure, and further to employ any other attorney or attorneys as he shall seem meet and in all things to act and do as if I were personally present, ratifying and confirming, whatsoever my said attorney shall do or cause to be done in, and about ye premises. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal this 9th. day of Aug. 1698.

George Symes (Seal)

Sealed and delivered in ye presence of

John Chapman

Cha. Chapman.

Proved in open Court held for Ye Isle of Wight County ye 10th. of October 1698, by ye Oaths of both ye Witnesses

Recorded Cha. Chapmen,
C. C.

Copy: Test R. A. Edwards Clerk Isle of Wight County.

D. B. #1, p. 260.

And order book entries in Surry County show that George Sims was deemed subject to court orders in that County in 1694 and 1702, although he was not present in Court at either time.²⁴

An order book in Surry Court, also proves that George Symes' wife was named Elizabeth, although her last name is not traceable.

²⁴"George Blow having been presented by the Grand Jury for making treash tobacco and packing it for saile, and George Sims on evidence therein being gone from Court, it is referred to be tryed at the next court by a Jury." July 3, 1694, Order Bk., 1691-1704, p. 107.

"Jury's Verdict: We find noe cause of presentment."
Sept. 4, 1694, p. 109.

"Elizabeth Simms presented by the Grand Jury for * * * breaker of the sabbath, ordered that she be summoned to appear at the next court to answer the same."

May 11, 1702, Surry Order Bk., 1691-1704, p. 224.

"Elizabeth Simms not appearing to answer presentment of Grand Jury, ordered taken into custody until she enter into bond for her appearance at next Court."

Nov. 27, 1702, Surry Order Book, 1691-1704, p. 229.

"Elizabeth Simms the wife of George Simms being presented by the Grand Jury for * * *, now appearing and not being able to make any defence thereto, is fined one hundred pounds of tobacco according to law."

Jan. 5, 1702-3, Surry Order Book 1691-1704, p. 233.

And it appears that George Symes was also present in court on that day.²⁵

These two last order book entries prove definitely two important points—first that George Symmes of Virginia was not the George Sims who married Margaret Poole at St. Mary le Bone Church in London, on 1, 17, 1685,²⁶ as he has been thought to have been; and secondly, that wherever George Symes went after

"Samuel Thompson, executor of the last will and testament of John Thompson, decd., having brought his account agt. William Pittman, Jr. and not appearing to prosecute the same is therefore dismissed."

March 3, 1701-2.

"Samuel Thompson agt. George Simms the same."
Surry Order Book, 1691-1704, p. 22.

²⁵"Adam Heath, Phillip Burrough, Thomas Jarrell, George Simms and John Laneir failing to appear to be sworn of ye Grand Jury for the ensueing year, showing sufficient reasons for such their failure are discharged, paying fines."

Jany. 5, 1702 (3?) Surry Order Book, 1691-1704, p. 234.

²⁶Publications of the Harleian Society, Vol. 47.

executing the above power of attorney to John Skelton in 1698, George Symes was back home in Surry or Isle of Wight County by January, 1703.

John Skelton died, and his will was probated in Isle of Wight County on April 10, 1704, his wife being executor of his will, dated Oct. 24, 1701.²⁷ And she made a settlement of her husband's attorneyship for George Symes in 1706 or 1707. The complete settlement does not appear on the County records, but enough appears to show that John Skelton had collected some money and tobacco for George Symes, and that George Symes was known as Doctor Sims at that time.

George Symes appears in Surry County records only twice after that, once as a witness in court on Nov. 3, 1709, in a suit against John Lane,²⁸ and last as a plain-

²⁷"In the name of God, Amen, I, John Skelton of Isle of Wight County being sick and weak of body but of sound and perfect memory (Thanks be to God) do make and ordain this to be my last will and testament in manner and form following: First I bequeath my soul to God that gave it to me and my body to be buried in such manner as my Executors heretofore named shall think fit. Item, I give and bequeath to my loving wife, one negro named Hager and my feather bed and furniture. Item, I give and bequeath my two negro men to be equally divided among my children. Item, I give and bequeath all ye rest of my movable estate (after my just debts are paid) to be equally divided between my loving wife and children. I do hereby make my loving wife my whole sole executor to this my last will, revoking and making nill and void all former by me made and ordain this to be my last as witness my hand and seal this 24th day of Oct. 1701.

Jn. Skelton Seal

Signed, sealed and delivered

in the presence of

Thomas Sharpe

Glen Baker

..... Hen. (Henry?)

Proved in open Court held for ye Isle of Wight County 10th. April 1704 by oaths of both ye witnesses and ordained to be recorded.

Test Cha. Chapman, Clerk

Copy: Test R. A. Edwards. Clerk,

Isle of Wight County.

Page 461, Bk. #2.

²⁸Order Book (Surry County) 1671-1713, p. 334.

tiff in a suit against John Lane, probably the same suit, June 20, 1711, when George was called and did not appear and his suit was dismissed for want of prosecution.²⁰ But in the list of those processioned for taxing in St. Pauls Parish, New Kent County, George Sims and Edward Sims appear in the report, as having been taxed in 1711-12. Meanwhile in the procession lists of St. Paul's Parish, New Kent County for 1708-9, John Sims and Matthew Sims were processioned, as having lands adjoining. So it would appear that the 1,000 acres of land listed on the Quit Rent Rolls of 1704 as belonging to John Sims were owned or taken in John's name in 1704, or about that time, for George Sims and his family; and that John and Matthew held it in 1708-9, and John, Matthew, George, and Edward in 1711-12, the land having been divided up among them. If John was only fourteen years old when the 1,000 acres were taken in his name, he and Matthew were about eighteen when it was processioned to them in 1708-9, and it was divided again to give another George and Edward shares in 1711-12. Of course there was nothing to show that this was George, Junior. But it will appear later that one of the Georges lived until 1737, when he signed a deed to land in St. Paul's Parish as "George Sr.," and when he would seem to have been too old to be the original George born about 1672. So the George who was processioned in 1711-12 must have been a son of the first George; although there may have been only the one George up until 1737. At any rate George of Surry must have been the father of John, Matthew, and Edward; and if the George listed with Edward in 1711-12 was George, Junior, at the time, then George the father lived on the land

²⁰"At a Court held in Southwork for the County of Surry, June ye 20th: 1711. George Sims not appearing to prosecute his Suit against John Lane the same is therefore dismisst." Surry County Order Bk. for 1691-1713, p. 370.

with them, or had died in 1711, about the time his law suit was dismissed in Surry, and his two youngest sons, George and Edward, moved up to New Kent.

It will be remembered that the oldest son, Adam, remained in Surry, or Brunswick County, probably having accepted as his share the 200 acres originally held in Surry County by George, the father, in 1704.

We are now ready to consider from whence George Symes came to Isle of Wight County in 1687, and whither he went after he executed his general power of attorney to John Skelton in August, 1698, returning to Isle of Wight County in Virginia in 1702, or probably as soon as 1700.

CHAPTER II.

SYMSES IN ANTIGUA.

Charles I, King of England, was beheaded in January, 1649. At that time Virginia and the English islands of the West Indies were thoroughly loyal to the Stuarts. Charles II, though a fugitive from England on the continent, became, on his father's execution, sovereign in Virginia, and remained so until the power of the Commonwealth in England repressed the loyalty of the Virginians a year or so later; and then, through the Governor Sir William Berkeley gave way in 1651 to a peaceful settlement with the Parliament by the election by the suffrage of the colonists of Richard Bennett, a roundhead, as governor, the cavaliers and followers of the House of Stuart were safe in Virginia. "The disasters of the cavaliers in England strenthened the party in the New World. Men of consideration 'among the nobility, gentry, and clergy,' struck 'with horror and dispair at the execution of Charles I,' and desiring no reconciliation with the unrelenting 'rebels,' made their way to the shores of the Chesapeake, where every house was for them a 'hostelry'; and every planter a friend. The mansion and purse of Berkeley were open to all; and at the hospitable dwellings that were scattered along the rivers and among the wilds of Virginia, the cavaliers, exiles like their monarch, met in frequent groups to recount their toils, to sigh over defeats, and to nourish loyalty and hope."¹ The same loyalty to the crown of England obtained in the Lesser Antilles. The histories of Antigua show that Charles II was declared king there without regard to the Puritan Revolotion;

¹Copied from Historian's History of the World, Vol. 22, British Colonies in the U. S., p. 594. At the end of each Volume of this careful restatement of many authorities is given the list of authorities for the statement.

although, as in Virginia, the islanders were unable to hold out long against the Commonwealth. But from then on, notations in the Antigua records show that it was thought there that the only other English province where a cavalier could live safely was Virginia.

The punitive ordinance of October 3, 1650, forbidding commerce between the disloyal provinces and other countries than England, therefore was made to apply only to Barbados, Antigua, Bermudas and Virginia,² foreign ships not being allowed to trade at any of their ports.

When Charles II was restored in 1660, he was of course joyfully accepted in those provinces; and his appreciation was expressed in part by giving to Virginia the honor of being called "the Old Dominion." The first bishop of the Church of England appointed by him was the bishop of Virginia, and as such his diocese extended all over the American Colonies and to the West Indies.³

Until an experimental shipping voyage was accomplished straight across from England to Massachusetts, the shipping lane to America was from England to the Canary Islands, thence to the West Indies, and thence up the American coast by Florida and the Carolinas to Chesapeake Bay; and that continued at least until the establishment of most of the colonies from Maryland southward, and probably later. Therefore it was easy for a ship to stop in the West Indies on its voyage to Virginia, and most of the explorers and the ships with the first emigrants to Virginia are stated to have done so.

Antigua, though discovered by Christopher Columbus, was first settled by the English in 1636. It was re-

²Ibid, p. 594.

³36Virginia Magazine of Biog. & Hist., pp. 45-50.

peatedly overrun, during the various wars in Europe, by the Spanish, the Dutch, and the French, the last French invasion being about 1667; and became finally an English colony thereafter.

Members of the Somersetshire Symes family were evidently settled in Antigua soon after the final establishment of English dominion over it, probably before that time; for while the first records of Symes deeds show a conveyance by Thomas "Simes" of 7 1/2 acres, Nov. 7, 1670, and a grant to Thomas "Simes" of 20 acres in Jany. 1672,⁴ the will of Henry Symes, probated in England in 1599, and who was the uncle of Thomas "Symes" of Barwick, Somersetshire, probably the Thomas "Simes" who received the grant in 1672 in Antigua, was placed upon the records in Antigua, though of course no titles in Antigua passed through that Henry Symes. Why Henry's will was placed on those records is unexplainable.

Thomas Symes of Winterbourn, Gloucester, later of Barwick, Somersetshire, was the third son of John Symes of Poundsford, member of Parliament, and High Sheriff of Somersetshire, as we shall see when we come to setting out the English Symes genealogy. When he died is not known; but he married Amy Bridges in 1640 and left eight sons, as shown by comparison of Somersetshire Symes wills (which will be done later), and definitely set out in the Symes genealogy in Oliver's *History of Antigua*.⁵

The Symes pedigree there set out, evidently made in Antigua sometime after 1780, since it includes An-

⁴Oliver's *Hist. of Antigua*, Vol. 3, p. 115, Thomas Simes of Antigua, Planter, to John Knight and John Short, planters of Antigua, Nov. 7, 1670. Thomas Simes 20 acres by Gov. Warner, surveyed 16 Jan. 1671-2.

⁵Vol. III, pp. 110-111. *The History of Antigua*, by Vere Langford Oliver, London: Mitchell & Hughes, 140 Wardow Street, W. 1899. For the genealogy of Symes set out in Oliver's book, see Appendix II, post.

tigua data that late, may be accepted as conclusive of what Antigua family records revealed; and what the Symes family there knew about the English data. It gives the eight sons of Thomas Symes of Barwick *seriatim*, Thomas, John, Edward, Charles, George, Henry, William and Richard, followed by three daughters. It gives the age of the fourth son Charles when he matriculated at Oxford in March, 1666, at 17, so that he was born in 1649; and it gives the baptismal date of the sixth son Henry as Nov. 16, 1653. These dates must be correct.

Therefore Lieutenant George Symes, the fifth son of Thomas, must have been born in 1651, although the date of his baptism is not given.

In the "Directory of Somersetshire," evidently based on a census taken for military purposes, the names of George Symes and John Symes appear on a list reported in May, 1671, for Coate Tything in the Parish of Martock.⁶ And if that George was Lieut. George Symes, as he was called in the Antigua genealogy, he could have gone to Antigua in the early spring of 1671, when twenty years old. And if his father was the Thomas Simes who received the grant in Antigua in 1672, George probably went to Antigua about that time, although there is no record proof that he did so. Let it be noted that the only date with reference to his father, Thomas, after his marriage in 1640, is the date 1667, which may indicate that he was in Antigua in 1667, or it may be merely the latest date he is known to have been alive in England.

Lieutenant George Symes was a merchant and member of the "Council" in Antigua in 1678, as we may see from the above referred to genealogy. He received a

⁶Directory of Somerset, an old volume reprinted, and to be found in most large public libraries, p. 122.

grant of land himself in 1681;⁷ he was a member of the Legislative Assembly in 1686;⁸ and he was Speaker of the Assembly when he died in 1688.⁹ There was taken in 1678 what purported to be a list of all the whites living in Antigua at that time, which is printed in Oliver's *History of Antigua*;¹⁰ and George Symes' name does not appear on that list. But the list evidently did not include the names of household or plantation employees, perhaps because they had been imported as contract workers, perhaps because they owned no land or tangible wealth. And as John Vernon, a wealthy planter with whom he had much to do later, is listed as having seven males in his household, as well as his slaves, George Symes may well have been one of those retainers of John Vernon. Certainly George Symes could not have come first to Antigua in 1678, and have been elected to the "Council" on his arrival. When he was made a lieutenant does not appear.

Some time before 1662, probably during the period of the Commonwealth in England, one Thomas Everard, "Gent," had settled in Antigua, and had acquired a plantation of at least three hundred and twenty acres on North Sound. Oliver says that Thomas was probably the son of Charles Everard of St. Christopher's, another of the Leeward Islands, not far from Antigua; and it is said in another history of Antigua¹¹ that "about the year 1651-2 a Mr. Everard is mentioned as holding the government of the Leeward, West India, Islands.

⁷260 acres. See *Genealogy* (supra).

⁸Oliver, *History of Antigua*, Vol. 1, p. LXVI.

⁹Idem, p. LXVII.

¹⁰Ibid.

¹¹"*Antigua and The Antiguan*s, 2 Volumes; London, Saunders and Ottley, Conduit St. 1844. The reference is in Vol. 1, p. 16. The book is anonymously written.

An official document, however, written in the year 1655, speaks of a gentleman of that name as governor of St. Kitts only." This latter historian does not say that Governor Everard's name was Charles.

It is more likely that if Thomas Everard came to Antigua from St. Christopher's (or St. Kitts, as it is usually called), he was Thomas Everard of Meath in Ireland. Burke's *Landed Gentry*, 4th edition (1874), supplement, says this of the Everard family of Randilestown, County Meath, Ireland: "The family of Everard has long been seated in County Meath, and this branch has possessed the estate of Randilestown from a remote period. James Everard, of Randilestown, d. 7 Queen Eliz., 1565, and was survived by his son, Richard Everard of R. who d. 29 Eliz. and was survived by his son, Patrick, who d. 8 James I and was survived by his son, Thomas Everard, who was restored to his estate (of which he had been deprived during the usurpation of the Protector, Cromwell) in 1663. He married Anne Barnewall, d. of Barnewall of Stock-Allen, in the County of Meath, and by her had two sons, Mathias, his sucsessor, and Christopher who survived his brother. The elder, Mathias E., a colonel in the army of James II, died without issue, and was survived by his brother, Christopher, who married Teresa Plunkett, d. of Lord Dunsany," &c.

As Thomas Everard died in Antigua, about 1663, as we shall see, leaving a widow, Elizabeth and a daughter, Dorothy, who married George Symes, who named a son Christopher; and as George Symes of Virginia named a son Matthew, which is not a Symes name, it would seem quite likely that when Cromwell deprived Thomas Everard of his estates in Ireland, Thomas went to the West Indies; that his first wife, Anne Barnewall, had died, and he married again in the West Indies, and became the father of Dorothy and her younger sister (who died,

as we shall see); that when his Irish estates were restored in 1663, either just before or just after his death, they went to his heir, his son in the army; and that he left his Antigua property to his second wife and infant daughters.

The will of Thomas Everard, "Gent," was dated "last of January, 1662" and is abstracted by Oliver as follows:¹² "To my sister, Mrs. Dorothy Everard £10 * * *" and after several gifts to friends, "all residue to my wife, Elizabeth Everard, my first daughter Dorothy and my youngest daughter, Elizabeth Everard, equally to the latter at 18. If both die without issue, to my sister, Mrs. Dorothy Everard." My wife, executrix. If she marry before my daughters are 18," then in trust. The will was recorded, 1678, Lib. B. fo. 30.

Evidently, a short time after Thomas Everard died, his widow married John Vernon, of "Old North Sound," Antigua; for in February, 1672, there was made by John Vernon a lease of twenty acres of Dorothy Everard's land, "part of her 380 acres." She is referred to as an infant.¹³

Next, on Sept. 3, 1678, there was made an indenture by which Dorothy Everard attempted to convey to John Vernon her entire interest in her plantation.¹⁴ And the next day, Sept. 4, 1678, there was an Act of the Legislative Assembly, ratifying Dorothy's conveyance. A petition was prepared in her name, which Oliver, the historian, abstracts, as follows: "Petition of Dorothy Everard, Infant, by Major William Barnes and John Parry, Esq., her guardians. She recites her father's will * * * my sister dead. My mother married John Vernon, My father died about 15 years ago [which

¹²Vol. 3, pp. 172, 178.

¹³Oliver, Vol. 3, p. 176.

¹⁴Ibid.

would be 1663]. His plantation ruined by the French [1667?] My father-in-law resettled, and my share of it, 190 acres, I wish to convey to him for 10 slaves. Petition for Act which follows: Recorded in Secy's office at Falmouth."¹⁵

Then April 2, 1679, "John Vernon of Old North Sound, Gent, of the one part, and George Symes, merchant, and Dorothy, his wife, daughter of Thomas Everett, Gent., deceased, of the other part, in consideration of a marriage lately had between George Symes and Dorothy, his wife, John Vernon gives to them and their heirs a plantation called Wakering Hall in Old North Sound."¹⁶

We shall see that this entire affair was the subject of litigation in the High Court of Chancery in England twenty-five years later, brought by Henry Symes, as guardian for Christopher Symes and Henry Symes, the two youngest children of George Symes and Dorothy, against John Vernon, Junior, the son and residuary devisee of the John Vernon who had married Dorothy's mother, and by her had John Vernon, Jr., and apparently no other children.

George Symes, Sr., who had become a captain, as we learn from the above law suit, had died in 1688, leaving a will, referred to in the bill in equity as executed in 1687, in which he made his brother Henry Symes, also in Antigua since 1682, guardian for his five children, "Henry Symes and Christopher Symes and also John Symes, George Symes and Elizabeth Symes."¹⁷ Captain George Symes' property seems not

¹⁵Oliver, Vol. 3, p. 176, Recorded in Lib. B, fo. 32.

¹⁶Oliver, Vol. 3, p. 115.

¹⁷Captain Henry Symes, George's next younger brother, was granted 100 acres of land in Antigua in 1682. He was Registrar of Antigua, and married and died there. His will was dated June 19, and sworn July 13, 1714. He left children Henry, Richard, James and Elizabeth. See genealogical chart of Symes' Family in Volume 3 of Oliver's History of Antigua.

to have been of much value, as appears from the bill in equity, at least so far as his children's interests were concerned.

The bill in Chancery, filed in England in January, 1704, names the children in the above order. But as Henry and Christopher, the two plaintiffs, were minors at the time, and as Henry was the only minor when the final decree was given in his favor in March, 1706, the order in which their names appear in the bill was evidently accidental, being written out by the solicitor in England; for Henry was the youngest. So George was probably the oldest.

But if George was the George Symes of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, appearing there first in 1687, and at least fourteen years old, and if he was the oldest child of Captain George Symes of Antigua, he must have been born in Antigua about 1672; which was seven years before April 1679, the date his father and mother joined in the above referred to conveyance to John Vernon. That instrument referred to the marriage between George Symes and Dorothy Everard as "lately had." Moreover in 1678 Dorothy's name was given in the Act of the Assembly as Dorothy Everard, Infant.

Let us remember that George Symes, Senior, was not quite of age himself in 1672, or barely so, and that Dorothy was the older daughter of Thomas Everard when he made his will in January, 1662, and was not twenty-one until she joined George in the indenture in 1679, as appears from the bill in equity; which does not claim that she was a minor at that time. Dorothy, therefore, must have been about fourteen years old in February, 1672, when her stepfather John Vernon first made a lease of twenty acres of her land. Could she have become the wife of George Symes at that time? The fact that her family did not recognize it at that time or allow them to live together until she was twenty-one,

when she probably married him under the orders of the Church of England, is quite understandable. The Everards were Papists, and Dorothy was not over fourteen, while George, though a well-born youth was a fifth son with certainly no property of value and probably was merely a contract worker.

1925966

The following quotation from "Antigua and The Antiguans" quite explains it:¹⁸

"It was also deemed advisable to ordain that marriages solemnized by the governor, council, or any justice of the peace, should in the absence of beneficed clergymen from the island, be adjudged equally binding and lawful, as if the ceremony had been performed by an orthodox minister. This was a regulation very necessary in that early period, when there was as yet no established church erected, or any clergymen officiating in the colony; and consequently, marriages were obliged to be celebrated by a civil power" (1672).

It is quite clear that George Symes and the orphan Dorothy Everard fell in love with each other and went before some municipal authority of the Island and were married, there being no clergy in the Island at the time, that when George, their first child, was born in 1672, her stepfather John Vernon leased twenty acres of her

¹⁸"Antigua and The Antiguans," Vol. 1, p. 43. The statute referred to has been found in the Congressional Law Library, in Washington, in a volume entitled "The Laws of Antigua, Consisting of the Acts of the Leeward Islands in force in Antigua, and the Acts of Antigua from 20 Car. 2, 1668, to 28 Vict., 1864, by authority. London: Printed by George E. Eyre and William Spotteswood, 1865."

The Act is "No. 2" on p. 10, of the above volume, and is as follows:

"An Act for confirming all marriages had and solemnized by any Justice of the Peace or other Magistrate within this Island [14th May, 1672].

"Whereas the late necessity of the Island for want of orthodox ministers hath been such that divers marriages have been had and solemnized, by virtue or colour of certain orders of the

share of the land, but that he and her mother refused to recognize the marriage until Dorothy was twenty-one, by which time George had pretty well established himself anyway, having been made a member of the Council of the Island in 1678. However, in September, 1678, John Vernon had persuaded Dorothy to attempt to convey to him all her interest in her land for a few slaves, claiming, as the bill in chancery says, that she had no present interest in it. But in April, 1679, when she would seem to have become twenty-one, she and her husband, George Symes, obtained from John Vernon another plantation, evidently in compromise settlement, although the indenture of conveyance recites that the grant of Wakering Hall was made "in consideration of a marriage *lately* had between George Symes and Dorothy."

Of course the marriage was no legal consideration for a conveyance by John Vernon to Dorothy. So the compromise settlement was at the bottom of the transaction. It may be that George and Dorothy went through a church ratification of their marriage before signing the indenture; but the Antigua pedigree does not give any date of the marriage—nor of other marriages in the pedigrees for that matter. So there may not have been any Antigua Church record of it, when the pedigree was written out.

Governor and Council in some other manner than hath been formerly used and accustomed: Now for the avoiding and preventing of all doubts and questions touching the same.

"2. It is therefore enacted by the Governor, Council, and Assembly and by the authority of the same That all marriages had and solemnized in this Island by and before any justice of peace or any one of the Council of this Island for the time being or hereafter shall be had and solemnized according to the direction or true intent of any order of the Governor and Council for the time being or reputed order as aforesaid, shall be adjudged, esteemed, and taken to be and to have been of the same and no other force and effect, as if such marriage had been had and solemnized by an orthodox minister according to the rites and ceremonies established or used in the Church or

At all events, between the Spring of 1679, when the marriage between George Symes and Dorothy Everard was recognized by the family, and the Spring of 1685, when their fourth child Christopher was born, as proven by the fact that he was a minor plaintiff in the suit in chancery in 1704, and had reached twenty-one before the final decree was signed in favor of his younger brother alone in April, 1706—during these six years, three children were born to George and Dorothy, namely, John, Elizabeth, and Christopher. So if we assume that John was born in the Spring of 1680, Elizabeth in 1682, and Christopher in 1684, the period between 1679 and 1685 is pretty well accounted for. So it may be accepted that George was born before 1679.

In the summer of 1687, then, George the oldest son was about fifteen years old, and realizing that he had no expectation of inheriting much from his father, he set out for Virginia, where there was no limit of opportunity as compared with the limitations in Antigua.

The will of Captain George Symes was made in 1687, and he died in 1688, naming his brother Henry and other friends in Antigua as guardians of his five children; but none but Henry accepted the charge. The will appears only from the statement of its contents in the bill in chancery, as will appear from Appendix I. Then "sometime in February" 1689, John Vernon died,

Kingdom of England, any law, custom, or usage to the contrary thereof notwithstanding.

"3. Provided always That this Act nor anything therein contained shall not extend to authorize or confirm any marriage had or solemnized by any other than an orthodox minister after the arrival of any such minister as aforesaid, he being benefited in this Island.

"4. If any shall hereafter be sued in any of the Courts of Common Law of this Island, and issue shall be joined upon the points of bastardy or lawfulness of marriages for or concerning the marriages had and solemnized as aforesaid, the same issues shall be tried by a jury of 12 men, according to the course of trial of other issues triable at common law, and not

leaving a will dated February 12, 1689, and set out in the "Further Answer" to the bill in chancery (which is also set out in Appendix I) in which he left fifty thousand pounds of sugar apiece to the "five youngest children" of Dorothy Symes, payable ten years after his death. This would make the legacies payable in February of 1699, or ten years after the day in February, 1689, when John Vernon died. But the English law allowed an executor one year without interest within which to pay a legacy. So the guardian of the children made his demand for them, as shown in the "Further Answer," in 1699, and the defendant claimed that they were not due until 1700.

Therefore when George Symes in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, executed in August, 1698, a power of attorney to John Skelton to collect all debts due him and to prosecute any suit in his name, it is quite persuasive that he set out for Antigua expecting to collect his legacy in February, 1699, under the terms of John Vernon's will; which would be due in about six months from the time he left Virginia. And this is corroborated by the averment in the bill that George Symes was in Antigua in 1699, when the due date arrived.

otherwise, any law, statute, or usage to the contrary hereof in anywise notwithstanding."

It will be noted that, as there were probably no records of the marriages before justices of the peace, the statute kept the reputation of issue of such marriages, and the honest intent of the unions, under the influence of the bastardy law.

CHAPTER III.

THE SUIT OF SYMES V. VERNON.

The suit of *Symes v. Vernon* was instituted in the High Court of Chancery in England on January 17, 1704, by Henry Symes as guardian for his nephews, Henry Symes and Christopher Symes (their order being reversed through error of the solicitor) against John Vernon, Junior, as executor of the last will of John Vernon, Senior, to recover for each of them the fifty thousand pounds of sugar, supposed to have been left to each of them by their mother's stepfather, John Vernon, Senior. The plaintiff had never seen the will, as the law did not make a will a public paper in those days, as soon as an executor proved it. The bill, therefore, averred that the plaintiffs had heard of the bequests in their favor, and charged the defendant with concealing the will and with conspiring to carry out a fraud which the bill charged had been first perpetrated against Dorothy by John Vernon, the testator, in persuading her that she had no interest in the estate of her father, Thomas Everard, and in inducing her to convey to him her interest in his lands. It further averred that after having acquired Dorothy's estate, John Vernon had repented of his fraud, and had promised his stepdaughter to make provision in his will for her children. The bill declared that ten years had elapsed since John Vernon's death, the time the plaintiff had heard that payment of the legacies was to be deferred, and that in 1699, he, Henry Symes, had made a written demand upon the defendant "on the request and direction" of the plaintiffs "and their brother George, or in their behalf." Of course if George had not been born until 1679, he would have been only twenty years old in 1699 and unable to direct his uncle, either as guardian or as attorney-in-fact, to make a demand for him. There-

fore one of the three wards must have been of legal age at the time, or this language would not have been used in the bill. The suit, however, was filed by Christopher and Henry alone; so it is probable that George did not have to sue for his legacy, but received it and returned to Virginia shortly after the demand; as the defense was solely that the plaintiff could not discharge the defendant if the legacies should be paid during his wards' minority; which was of course a mere subterfuge.

The importance of the suit was not especially the fact that it was won, but rather the genealogical information obtained from the averments in the papers. These consist of an original bill, filed 17th January, 1704, an answer by the executor, John Vernon, Junior (which however has not been obtained from London), a "further answer" made by his wife, Elizabeth Vernon, as his executrix (John Vernon, Junior, having died shortly after making his own answer), filed in January, 1705, and the court's decree rendered by Lord Keeper, Sir Nathan Wright, in favor of Henry Symes, the only remaining infant at that time, which was rendered April 30, 1706. Note that the popular charge that the old English Chancery practice was extremely slow is not borne out by this record. The case is reported in 2 Vernon (English Chancery Reports) 553-4; but the report is merely an abstract of the case, as the reports of that day were, and is full of inaccuracies, as will appear by comparing it with the papers, copied almost complete in Appendix I.¹

The important facts appearing from the bill are the will of George Symes, the demand made by Henry Symes, the guardian of his children in 1699, at

¹Photostatic copies of the bill and further answer, and a translation of the decree into modern English, are among the Author's files. They were obtained through the curtesy of Duncan Campbell Lee, Esq., Middle Temple, who kindly allowed his secretary, Miss Evelyn Bantyard, to search for them at the Record Office and procure the copies.

the "direction" of George, Junior, and the fact that George, Junior, was in Antigua at the time the demand was made, the fact that his brother, John, died before 1699, and therefore was not one of the Johns in Virginia, the fact that Colonel Edward Byam, a very prominent Antiguan, named by George Symes, Senior, a co-guardian with Henry (although he declined to serve) was a close friend of George, Senior, and the fact that George, Senior, died leaving nothing of value other than a few slaves.

The "further answer" is important, first, in setting out the will of John Vernon, which was drawn near his death, and leaves 50,000 pounds of sugar apiece to "daughter Symes, her five youngest children," which shows if it has any significance that he did not intend to give a bequest to the oldest child of Dorothy Symes, and as the whole record of the case shows that she never had but five children, the scrivener made an error, and wrote "five" instead of the "four" youngest children, and the testator was too far gone to correct it. He had two reasons for excluding George, Junior, first that George was born before the family recognized Dorothy's marriage, and secondly because George, Junior, had gone away from the Island, and might well be undiscoverable ten years after the testator's death. Certainly he would be old enough to take care of himself by that time, if he should be alive. The next important fact appearing in the "further answer" is in the will of John Vernon, Junior, revealed by his making "the oldest son of George Symes formerly of Antigua" his eventual devisee to avoid his estate's passing to remote heirs if all his own children should die without issue. John Vernon, Junior, made his will in 1704; so that this bequest showed that the George Symes referred to could not have been George Symes, Senior, who had died in 1688. It also shows that George, Jun-

ior, was not in Antigua in 1704, that John, Junior, was on good terms with George, Junior, and that the name of the oldest son of George, Junior, was not known to John, Junior, when he made the bequest.

The next important fact appearing from the "further answer" is that Sir William Mathew, who was Governor of Antigua at the time, and who is said by the author of "Antigua and the Antiguans" to have been the ablest of the Antiguan statesmen, was intimate with the family, the importance of which will appear in the next chapter.

Other important facts appearing from the "further answer" are in the correspondence set out in it, that George Symes, Junior, was living comfortably on the income from his "slaves," which would not be important but that "Betty," meaning the sister, was also living on the income from hers; and the bill shows that she had received her legacy. So George, Junior, must have received his legacy, too. And lastly we see that John Vernon, Junior, called George, Junior, "cousin," showing that George was considerably older than his sister, merely referred to as "Betty." John Vernon, Junior, and Dorothy, George's mother, were half brother and sister.

There is no special importance to the averments of the decree, except the elimination of all the children but Henry, the youngest, and the reiteration that Dorothy Symes had become twenty-one years old in April, 1679, when she and George made the conveyance to John Vernon of her interest in the plantation and received the plantation, Wakering Hall, in return.

There is a possible justification for the action of John Vernon, Senior, in his position that Dorothy did not have a present interest in the estate of her father, Thomas Everard, under his will in 1662. We should note that the bill does not mention Thomas Everard's will at all. But from Oliver's History of Antigua we

find that the will gave the property to his wife, Elizabeth, and his two children equally at eighteen. So the utmost that John Vernon, after he had married the widow, admitted was that the children had a future interest after they should become eighteen, if indeed the children's interest would even become vested before they should reach that age. It must be remembered that *Wild's Case*, 6 Coke's Reports 17, had not been very long decided, and the Antigua lawyers may not have been familiar with it. By that case when one devises land "to A and his children," if A has children at the time, A and his children share equally, but without that decision, an argument could have been made that "children" meant heirs," and so A might claim a fee interest. Here the children were mentioned, but they were not to have the possession until they reached eighteen. So it was doubtless argued that the children had no vested interest until that time, and that then their interest was a remainder after the life of their mother. On the other hand, Henry Symes, making a case for Dorothy and her issue, doubtless claimed that Dorothy and her sister took present interests equally with their mother, though the possession might be postponed until they should reach eighteen; or he argued that they took their interest by descent as heirs of Thomas Everard, it being impossible to take by a will what one can take by descent, thereby leaving to the mother, Elizabeth, to establish a third interest, or a dower interest, as she might claim. Under later law there would be no question that the mother took only a one-third interest, and that Dorothy and her sister took two-thirds of the plantation in fee, although they were not to have the returns until they should reach eighteen; and the younger girl having died before reaching eighteen, Dorothy took her sister's share also in fee, since the mother could not inherit from the daughter, except by some statute changing the common law.

CHAPTER IV.

ADDITIONAL DATA CORROBORATIVE THAT GEORGE SYMES
CAME FROM ANTIGUA.

We have seen that George Symes, while he was still in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, on August 9, 1698, executed a power of attorney to John Skelton, Blacksmith, to collect and recover all manner of debts and demands due him, as if he George Symes were himself present.

It has been noted as peculiar that George Symes who came to Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in 1687 as a mere bonded worker, and whose head-tax was paid for him by others as late as 1692, could have accumulated enough wealth by 1698 to require his giving a power of attorney to someone to collect claims owing to him while absent from home.

If he was born in 1672, as we have assumed, he reached his twenty-first year in 1693, and in that year would have come into possession of whatever he may have received from his late father's estate, held for him by his guardian, Henry Symes, in Antigua. We have seen from the last chapter that the "further answer" to the bill of complaint in *Symes v. Vernon* reveals that George was believed to be living comfortably on the income from his slaves at some time prior to the filing of that paper in the suit; and the text of the "further answer" shows that the statement was in a letter dated December 15, 1700 (See p. 206 in Appendix I, post.). So George Symes, Junior, may have gotten his share of his father's estate (whatever it amounted to) in 1693 or 1694. Moreover 1693 is the only year from 1687 to 1703 when his head-tax was not paid in Virginia (See p. 17, *supra*). So he probably went back to Antigua before his tax was due in 1693, got his share of the cash or proceeds of sale of the slaves and returned to Virginia and loaned it out at interest there.

Then in 1698, anticipating the due date of his legacy of 50,000 pounds of sugar from his stepfather, George gave the power of attorney to John Skelton to collect any money owing to him, and set out for Antigua again. He paid head-tax in Virginia while he was absent this time, because he had too much property to deny being a resident of the colony. Let us now try to trace John Skelton.

There are various references to the Skelton family in Virginia records.¹ His simple occupation of blacksmith did not prevent his wife from taking a trip back to England; for in the settlement of his estate by Susan Skelton, presumably his wife, in 1706-7, there is an entry, probably from his account book, "to my wife in England."² So John Skelton may well have roamed about the world himself. In 9 William and Mary Quarterly, 2nd Series, p. 211, in some notes on the Skelton family, it is said: "John Skelton executed a bond in Surry in 1659 in relation to Prudence Kindred." See Surry records in Virginia State Library. Then on April 3, 1671, a John Skelton was in Dickinson's Bay, Antigua.³ Then in 1676 John Skelton had taken part in Bacon's Rebellion in Virginia. "John Skelton along with a number of other unfortunate followers of Nathaniel Bacon, was required to appear in Surry Court with a halter around his neck, and on bended knee implore the pardon of His Majesty's Governor for his 'late and horrid' rebellion, which pardon he and others received upon giving bond for their good behavior."⁴ He died in Isle of Wight

¹See 2 William & Mary Quarterly, 1st Series, pp. 273-4; 6 Idem, p. 64, 11 Idem, p. 80, 12 Idem, pp. 62-64.

²Isle of Wight Co., Will & Deed Book, 2, p. 482. "Acct. Cur. of John Skelton, decd. To Doctor Sims, 63 Lbs.-18-06. To my wife in England, To Dr. Sims. 500 Lbs. tob."

³I Oliver, History of Antigua, p. XLV.

⁴See the same notes in 9 William & Mary Quarterly, 2nd Series, p. 211.

County in 1704, leaving a will dated 1701 referring to his wife and children.⁵

Of course the John Skelton who was in Antigua in 1671 may have been a different John Skelton from the one who was in Virginia in 1676 and later. But it would have been at least natural for George Symes, on returning to Antigua, to put in charge of his affairs in Virginia, one of his friends who was familiar with his relations in Antigua; and if John Skelton had been in Antigua for several years, he was certainly acquainted with the families there, of whom there were only some few hundred at the time.

Again, when George Symes first came to Virginia in 1687, after his first year with Robert Littlebury, he lived with, or was in the service of, one Thomas Matthews for two years, 1688 and 1689, Thomas Matthews paying George Symes' head-tax, as we have seen. Then in 1700 one Edward Matthews was in the service of George Symes, George paying his head-tax.

We find in Volume 1, of the Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, p. 91, note 3, that Captain Samuel *Matthews* came to Virginia in 1622, that he was a Commissioner to examine the general condition of the colony in 1623, that he was a member of the Executive Council from 1624 to 1644, that he was elected to the Council in 1652, the Commonwealth government having established, on the demand of the Virginia colonists, a democratic government there; that he was elected Governor of the province by the House of Burgesses in 1659. He seems to have died in 1660. He had by use of political tact, embraced the republican philosophy of government. He had issue, as there reported, sons, 1, Thomas, of Stafford County, who was burgess for that county in 1676, and 2, Lieut. Col. Samuel, of Warwick County, who was burgess for that county in 1652-3, was

⁵Isle of Wight Deed Book 2, p. 461.

appointed to the Council in 1655, and who died in 1670, leaving a son John, under age.

In Volume 10 of William & Mary Quarterly, 2nd Series, p. 349, we find that Captain Samuel Matthews also had a son Captain Francis Matthews, who had a son Baldwin. In Volume 6 of William & Mary Quarterly, 1st Series, p. 91, we find a brief summary of the Matthews family from Governor Samuel Matthews down; and it is there stated that neither the Thomas Matthews, who wrote a contemporaneous account of Bacon's Rebellion (apparently not preserved) nor Edward Matthews was descended from Governor Samuel Matthews.

A Thomas Matthews had lands in several counties in Virginia according to the Rent Rolls of 1704 or 1705, including Henrico, further up the James River than Surry and Isle of Wight; but he is not listed in Surry or Isle of Wight Rent Rolls at all.

So an Edward Matthews had 330 acres in Henrico on the Rent Rolls of 1704⁶ and 160 acres in King & Queen County, even further away.⁷

An Edward Matthews was evidently connected with Bacon's Rebellion, for we find in Volume 8 of Virginia Magazine of History & Biography, p. 138, that Edward Matthews was on his knees to beg forgiveness of one Thomas Steggs in 1667. And that was not his only difficulty with the law; for in 22 William & Mary Quarterly, 1st Series, p. 262, there is a quotation from Henrico County Order Book for 1710-14, p. 298, "Edward Matthews, Richard Ward, Jr., and Thomas Matthews taken up for fighting in presence of court." Note that the name of all the above persons was *Matthews*. But an *Edward Matthew* had 50 acres in Surry County on the Rent Rolls of 1704.⁸ Then note that in the list of

⁶28 Va. Mag. of History & Biography, p. 214.

⁷32 Ibid, p. 152.

⁸29 Virginia Mag. of History & Biography, p. 23.

titheables in Surry County⁹ appears the entry for 1700, "George Symes and Edward Matthews, 2," interpreted to mean, in accordance with the Statute that an Edward Matthews was of the household if not the bond servant of George Symes during that year. Then reflect that this could not be the Edward Matthews who owned 330 acres in Henrico County, and 160 acres in King and Queen County only three years later—1704. Now note that the Edward Matthew who had 50 acres in Surry County in 1704 is spelt on the Rent Rolls (though not in the tythe records) *Matthew*, not *Matthews*.

Sir William Mathew was Governor of Antigua in 1704. The anonymous author of "Antigua and the Antiguans" considered him the "brightest luminary the West Indies produced." That author continues: "He was colonel of Monk's own regiment, the Coldstream Guards, and highly distinguished himself * * * under William III. In 1702 he was nominated brigadier general of her Majesty's Guards; and in 1704, appointed captain-general and governor-in-chief of the Leeward Caribbee Islands, and sailing from England at the beginning of June * * * 1704, where he died 4th Dec. following."¹⁰

The above is taken from a genealogy of the Mathew family. Sir William Mathew was evidently born in Antigua, of which his father, Abednego Mathew, was also governor, though later a governor of St. Christophers, where he died in 1681.

Oliver's History of Antigua contains a fuller pedigree of the Mathew family, however. And from that it appears that Sir William Mathew had a brother, Thomas, who was a minor living in St. Christophers in 1680, and living in 1685, and that Sir William had a

⁹Page 17, *supra*.

¹⁰"Antigua and the Antiguans," Vol. II, Appendix, pp. 337-8.

second son, Edward, who was also a minor in 1680, and who died a bachelor in 1712, having made a will dated June 12, 1710.¹¹

Therefore while Sir William was in England with King William III, his second son Edward might well have gone with George Symes on his return trip to Virginia in 1700 and stayed there until his father was made governor of Antigua in 1704, and died; when Edward would naturally return to the islands.

By examining the will of John Vernon, Junior (see Appendix II) it will appear that Governor Mathew was "a loving friend" of John Vernon, Junior, and the first named executor of the will.

The Thomas Mathew of St. Christophers, a minor in 1680 according to Oliver, could have been in Virginia in 1688, when George Symes came to live with him. But certainly Edward Mathew could easily have come to Virginia with George Symes on his return voyage, after collecting his legacy from John Vernon's estate, and could have stayed until he had acquired fifty acres in 1704, and until his father died; when he went back to Antigua.

But perhaps the most cogent corroborative evidence that the George Symes of Isle of Wight and Surry Counties was the son of Captain George Symes and Dorothy Everard of Antigua is two records in Hanover County, Virginia.

Volume 6 of the reprint of "Virginia County Records" gives abstracts of all the Hanover wills prior to 1800 which have been preserved from the destruction of Hanover records by the federal army during the War Between the States; and on page 20 is given the will of Alexander Snead of St. Martin's Parish, dated October 15, 1733, probated September 6, 1734. He gave to son

¹¹Oliver, History of Antigua, Vol. II, p. 252.

Matthew, to son Jacob, to wife Mary, and to son Christopher.

Also a preserved Volume of Hanover County Court Orders made in 1734-5 contains the bond of George Sims as administrator of the estate of Matthew Snead, with Edward and James Sims as his sureties. The bond was not materially different from the usual administrator's bond of today, and was probated in open court, as was the custom at the time, on April 3, '1735.¹²

We have seen from the English Chancery suit of *Symes v. Vernon*¹³ that Captain George Symes left a son named Christopher, and we have seen from the pedigree of Thomas Everard¹⁴ that he had two sons named Matthew and Christopher; and that they were probably older half-brothers of Dorothy Everard of Antigua, the wife of Captain George Symes. But at all events, we have already concluded that George Symes of Isle of Wight and Surry Counties had a son named Matthew, whether named for Matthew Everard or not, and the close connection of John, Matthew, George and Edward Sims and their land-holdings in New Kent County from 1709 on to 1727 proves that they were of the same family.

But if George Sims of Hanover was administrator of the estate of Matthew Snead, and if Edward Sims was willing to be his surety, they must have been kin to Matthew Snead. Evidently Matthew Snead was the person named in the will of Alexander Snead as his

¹²The record is in 1 Hanover County, Virginia, Court Records, 1733-1735, p. 212. Archives Div., Virginia State Library, Richmond, Virginia.

¹³Supra, Chapter II, p. 33, and Appendix III, post.

¹⁴Supra, Chapter II, p. 31.

son. So Mary, the wife of Alexander Snead, one of whose sons was named Matthew and another named Christopher, must have been the sister of George Sims and the daughter of George Symes of Isle of Wight and Surry. Also evidently her son Matthew Snead was named for his uncle Matthew Sims. But for whom was Christopher Snead named? As George Symes had a son Christopher (who seems, by the way, to have disappeared after the law suit of *Symes v. Vernon*) and a son George, and the Snead family in Virginia was so intimate with a George Sims that this George Sims administered the estate of one of the sons who bore the name of George Sims' brother, Matthew; and as the Snead family had another son named Christopher Snead, it is unescapable that the Virginia Sims and Snead families were both the issue in the second generation of the Antigua family.

It is almost as certain that Matthew Sims and Christopher Sims inherited their names from Matthew and Christopher Everard, sons of Thomas Everard of Meath;¹⁵ and that he was the Thomas Everard who appeared in Antigua after his estates in North Ireland were taken by Cromwell. When they were returned to the family by Charles II in 1663,¹⁶ about the time of Thomas Everard's death, they passed first to his son in England, Col. Matthew Everard, and on his death to Christopher Everard, his younger brother.

We have shown in the first part of this Chapter that Matthew Sims may also have been named for the Matthew family with whom his father George Symes

¹⁵See the Everard Genealogy, *supra*, Chapter II, p. 31.

¹⁶See *supra*, Chapter II, p. 31.

of Isle of Wight was intimate; so perhaps his name may have had both sources.¹⁷

¹⁷There are two other pieces of possibly confirmatory information which could strengthen the conclusion that the George Symes of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in 1687 came thither from Antigua. One is the will of Dorothy Symes, who married Arthur Freeman, Esq., of Antigua, sometime after the death of her first husband, Captain George Symes. Her will was dated July 5, 1721; she was buried at St. John's, Antigua, Nov. 1, 1724; and her will was proved March 26, 1737, and was filed, or recorded, in "56 Wall," whatever that may mean. Dorothy's will, if found, will probably refer to her son George, or to his children, as the will of John Vernon, Jr., we recall from the last Chapter, made "the oldest son of George Symes, formerly of Antigua," his eventual devisee.

The other source of possible information is, of course, the will of Edward Mathew, above referred to, made in 1710, presumably in Antigua. If Edward Mathew was in Virginia from 1700 to 1704, as suggested, his will might refer to some person there; and as an Edward Matthew lived with George Symes in Virginia in 1700, a reference to that fact in the will of Edward Mathew of Antigua would be conclusive of the identity not only of the Edwards but of the Georges.

However the wills of that period have been so badly cared for, as reported by Miss Bessie Harper, of St. John's, Antigua, in a letter to the Author of this essay, that the discovery of these two wills is improbable.

CHAPTER V.

THE ANCESTRY OF GEORGE SYMES OF ANTIGUA AND HIS
EARLY COLLATERAL RELATIVES.

The descendants of William Symes of Chard are given in the Harleian Manuscripts in the British Museum, being the original notes made by the heralds on their visitations throughout the counties.

In Volume XI of the 11th edition of *Encyclopædia Britannica*, p. 576, it is said, "Genealogies in great plenty are found in manuscripts and printed volumes from the 16th Century onward. Remarkable among these are the descents recorded in the Visitation Books of the heralds, who, armed with commissions from the crown, the first of which was issued in 20 Henry VIII, perambulated the English Counties, viewing arms and registering pedigrees. The notes in their register books range from the simple registration of a man's name and arms to entries of pedigrees many generations long. * * * The principal visitations took place in the reigns of Elizabeth, James I and Charles II. No commission has been issued since the accession of William and Mary, but from that time onwards large numbers of genealogies have been recorded in the registers of the College of Arms, the modern ones being compiled with a care which contrasts remarkably with the unsupported statements of the Tudor heralds."

In Volume XIII of the *British Encyclopedia*, on page 329, may be found the following: "In England the royal officers of arms were made a corporation by Richard III. Nowadays the members of this corporation, known as the College of Arms or Herald's College, are Garter Principal King of Arms, Clarenceux King of Arms South of Trent, Norroy King of Arms North of Trent," and four others.

The "Visitation of Somerset" made in 1623 contains the arms and descendants of William Symes of Chard down to that date, 1623. The visitation was made by the Clarenceux King at Arms of that date, one Cooke. His original notes are in the Harleian Manuscripts in the British Museum; but they have been copied and published in the "Harleian Publications," to be found in all large American libraries; that of 1623 being called the "Visitation of Somerset, 1623," which may be found on page 110 of Volume Eleven. But they also appear in another volume of the Harleian Publications, entitled "Grantees of Arms to the end of the XVII Century, named in Docquets & Patents, in the manuscripts preserved in the British Museum, the Bodleian Library" &c., "alphabetically arranged by the late Joseph Foster, and contained in the additional MS. No. 37147 in the British Museum" Edited by W. Harry Rylands, F.S.A., London, 1915.

On page 248 of that volume is listed,

"SYMES, William, of Chard, Somt. (6 Aug.) 1591, by Cooke. Harl. MSS. 1422 fo. 15b, and 5887, fo. 82, azure, three escallops in pale, or; Stowe MS. 670, fo. 55."

The same publication lists also, "Syms, Edward, of Daventry, Northts. granted _____ 1592, by Cooke, Harl. MSS. 1359, fo. 104, and 1422, fo. 95, Genl. 91; Add. MS. 4966, fo. 85b." It omits the arms of Edward, however, although they are known to have been, "ermine, three increscents gules," with a crest, a head in armor, the visor up, face proper.

William Symes did not receive a crest at that visitation; but he obtained one at some later time, for it appears in Berry's Encyclopoedia of Heraldry, Vol. III, alleged to be taken from the records of the College of Arms, as "a demi-hind, rampant and erased, or"; and

it also appears in the Antigua pedigree using the word "salient" instead of "rampant," which means the same thing.

Volume III of Oliver's History of Antigua contains at page 110 a very full genealogy of the Antigua Symes family down to the latter part of the 18th Century, and including the younger members of the family living at Antigua at the time; and it is printed as Appendix II to this essay, leaving off, however, the portion after the children of George Symes, those omitted being the descendants of Henry Symes, Captain George Symes' brother, who died in Antigua leaving several children living there.

The Antigua genealogy begins with John Symes, of Barwick, and his wife Jane, believed by the family to have been the father and mother of William of Chard; but the line from them is a dotted line, showing that there is no record that John of Barwick was the father of William Symes of Chard, and as John evidently did not attain the importance of William, either in position or wealth, the Harleian Manuscripts did not show William's descent from John.

William Symes of Chard must have been born about 1540, if his father was John Symes of Barwick, administration on whose estate was granted Sept. 1, 1563, according to the Antigua pedigree. He must have lived in the town of Chard when his arms were granted by Cooke in 1591. And in his will he devises his "manor house in Chard."

The facts in this chapter are obtained from the Harleian Publications of manuscripts and records, and from abstracts of Somerset wills collected by Rev. Frederick Brown,¹ to be found in the Congressional Library

¹"Abstracts of Somerset Wills, copied from the manuscript collection of the late Rev. Frederick Brown, M.A.F.S.A." Copied and printed by F. A. Crisp, London, 1889, in six parts, only 150 copies.

and in the New York Public Library, and of course in others. The Antigua pedigree is used for the dates of college entrances and dates of births of Thomas Symes' children; but otherwise only for verification.

William Symes married Elizabeth, a daughter of Robert Hill, of Yard, near Taunton, in Somersetshire, by his first wife, Alice Clark. Elizabeth Hill may have been William's second wife, however, for on page 26 of Volume Eleven of the Harleian Publications appear the arms of Cogan, "Gules: 3 leaves erect, argent," with the statement that William Symes' daughter Joane by his wife Agnes of Colendon married Thomas Cogan of Montague. The Cogan arms were granted in 1623. Page 110 of the same Volume 11 is referred to, thereby connecting it with William Symes of Chard; also the visitation of 1531-94, p. 102. But this cross reference may have been a mistake of the editor of the Harleian Publications; and the William Symes who married Agnes Colendon, may have been another William. It has already been stated that the Symes family in Somersetshire was large. The author of this essay was able to obtain very little assistance from the Parish Registers of Somersetshire, copies of which have been published in Sixteen volumes by Dwellys. They give the births, marriages, and deaths recorded in the various parishes, from near the beginning of the 16th Century, so far as they have been preserved. Symes data are listed in about ten parishes. But it is impossible to connect them, or to separate the various families.

The pedigree of William Symes on p. 110 of Volume Eleven of the Harleian Publications, being the Visitation of Somerset of 1623, is as follows, not using the lines to show descent:

Wm. Symes married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Hill of Yard.

Arms: Azure, three escallops in pale, or.

Children of William Symes: 1st son, John Symes of Poundsford; 2nd son, Robert; 3rd son, William; daughters, Jane, Alice, Elizabeth and Mary. Note that William's will shows that at his death in 1597 he had two other sons, Henry and James, who were of course dead in 1623.

John Symes of Poundsford in County Somerset, Esq., married Amy, daughter of Thomas Horner, of Mells, County Somerset. Whom William's sons Robert and William married is not given. But Jane married Roger How of London;² Alice married Wm. Hodges; Elizabeth married William Mallet, and Mary married Robert Hendly.

Children of John Symes: 1st son, John Symes; 2nd son, Henry; 3rd son, Thomas; daughters, Jane, Susan, Elizabeth, Katherine, Amy, Elinor, Dorothy and Edith.

John Symes [Junior] married Abigail, daughter of Arthur Arscott of Tetcott, in County Devon.

Jane married Sir John Seymour, Kt., of County Somerset. Elizabeth married Nicholas Martin of County Devon.

The wives of Henry and Thomas were not given in this pedigree. Thomas was not married until 1640; and Henry's marriage was doubtless later too. The children of John Symes [Junior] in 1623 were given as Grace and, twins, and William, aged half a year in 1623. The pedigree was signed John Symes—evidently John Symes of Poundsford.

²It is certainly an error that Jane married Roger How; as the pedigree of the Pole family in the Devonshire Visitation, 1620, Harleian Publications, Vol. 6, p. 214, shows that Lady Jane Pole was the daughter of Wm. Symes of Chard.

An abstract of the will of William Symes of Chard is found in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, 1st Series, p. 52; and is as follows:

"Wm. Symes, of Poundsford, Somerset, merchant, will dated June 4, 1597, proved July 27, 1597, by Eliz. Symes the relict.

Poor of Charde & Poundsford. The rt. Hon. Sir Edward Seymour, Kt. Lord Seymour of Pomeroy, Devon, by deed Nov. 29, 31 Eliz. hath granted me an annuity of 100 marks out of the demesne of Beery Pomeroy for 99 yrs., if Elizabeth my wife and Henry and James my sons shall live so long. To my son John Symes, £2000 according to certain covenants between me and Sir John Popham, Kt., Chief Justice, and Thomas Horner, Esq. To Henry my son 1000 marks. To my son Robert 500 pounds. My son Wm. £500 at age of 21. My daughter Elizabeth 1000 marks. My daughter Margaret 1000 marks at age of 21 or marriage. My daughter Margery Pyne, 100 marks. Joseph Pyne my son-in-law living in Chard. My manors of Barwick, Bowre, Stoford, Somerset, & Franklin, Dorset. Mill in West Coker and lands in Taunton. My manor house in Charde to Elizabeth my wife during her life. Executrix. Supervisors John Pyne, Esq., Roger Hill, Gent. & Bro-in-law Hugh Hill gent."

The abstract is very defective so far as naming the devisees, but it shows that William Symes was a wealthy man.

John Symes of Poundsford, Somerset, eldest son and heir of William Symes, was born March 4, 1572, and died Oct. 21, 1661, at the age of 88 years, 7 months, and 17 days, according to a volume called "Barwick and its Church," by John Batten, F.S.A., quoted in Volume III of Oliver's Antigua, p. 116. A long epitaph at Frampton Cottrell Church, referred to by Mrs. Jane

Morris in her "Adam Symes and His Descendants"³ says that John Symes died at the age of 80. But Oliver quotes a long epitaph at Barwick telling what an honorable personage John Symes was. It agrees, however, that he was buried at Frampton Cottrell, Gloucester.

The Antigua pedigree says that John Symes entered Exeter College, Oxford, at the age of 14, and graduated with a B.A. degree in 1591, that he was a student at Lincoln's Inn in 1589, that he was member of Parliament for Somerset, 21 James I, and that he was High Sheriff of Somersetshire.

The will of John Symes of Poundsford, dated Oct. 5, 1658, proved Dec. 19, 1661, is likewise abstracted by Brown (1st Series, p. 53), the abstract being as follows: "To be buried at Frampton Cotterell, County Gloucester. To my nephew Arthur Symes £100, at end of his apprenticeship. [Who Arthur was, we do not know.] I am possessed for many years to come & undetermined of the mansion of Poundsford, my Execrs. shall convey it to Wm. Symes, eldest son of John Symes, dead. He not to vex or prosecute any suit against Henry & Thomas Symes. To my nices Elizabeth & Grace Symes £800 to be paid out of Poundsford. My nephews John and Edward Symes, sons of my son Thomas Symes. Residue to my sons Henry & Thomas Symes, Exrs."

It is evident that the word "nices" was used for granddaughters, the twin girls listed in the 1623 pedigree, and the word "nephews," was clearly used for "grandsons," as John and Edward were two of his grandsons.

John, the first son of John Symes of Poundsford, was dead, as shown by the above will, leaving a son William; so this William, six months old in 1623, as shown by the Harleian pedigree of that date, was 38 when his grandfather died in 1661. He married at some

³Phila., Dorrance & Co., 1938, p. 366.

time Rachel Bluett, daughter of Francis Bluett, and died without issue in 1687, or 1688, leaving a will dated Nov. 30, 1687, proved Feby. 16, 1687-8, the abstract of which is in Brown's Abstracts of Wills, Fourth Series, p. 70. He leaves most of his estate to his wife, and his brother, Henry Symes. The will was sealed with his arms. The will of Rachel (Bluett) Symes also is abstracted by Brown, Fourth Series, p. 71.

Henry Symes, the brother of William, and therefore heir at law of his grandfather John Symes of Poundsford, on the death without issue of William, married Eleanor

Henry and "Elinor" had three children, John, George, and Eleanor. Henry, the father, left a will dated May 15, 1693, abstracted in Brown's Abstracts, Fourth Series, p. 71, devising the estate left him by his brother William, who was six months old in 1623, as we have seen. He refers to himself as of Bristol and London, "gent," and devised his estate to his son John, leaving only £200 to his "youngest son George Symes," and something to his daughter Eleanor. His son John died unmarried, and without issue, in 1698, leaving his estate to his sister Eleanor, who married Francis Duncombe (Brown, Fourth Series, p 71); and his younger brother George became heir at law to the manor of Poundsford, if it had not been disposed of prior to John's death (which does not appear from the will).

This George evidently lived in London; for in the church records of St. Mary le Bowe, published in Volumes 44 and 45 of the Harleian Publications, we find the following births:

"Feb. 24, 1702, Sarah, d. of Geo. & Sarah Symes,"
Part 1, p. 45;

"May 7, 1704, Henry, s. of Geo. & Sarah Symes,"
Ibid.,

"Aug. 10, 1710, Eleanor, d. of George & Sarah Symes."

These are given to show that this George Symes was not the George Symes in Hanover County, Virginia, in 1735, who, we will show, was the son of George Symes of Surry County, Virginia, although George of Hanover had a wife named Sarah. George of Hanover could not have been old enough to have a child as early as 1702.

With the removal of George, the son of Henry, to London, we lose that line, and return to the younger sons of William Symes of Chard, Henry, James, Robert and William. They all are mentioned in their father's will. Henry died unmarried and without issue in 1599, leaving a will abstracted in Brown's Abstracts, First Series, p. 52, which was proved June 15, 1599, and leaving "To my sisters Jane Howe, Alice Hodges, and Margery Pyne, 4 angels," and making his brother John Symes his executor. The queer point is that this will was also recorded in Antigua; why cannot be explained, because Antigua was not settled until 1636.

Robert, and two of the daughters of Wm. Symes of Chard, Eleanor and Mary, were christened in London at St. Mary Somerset Church; for the record is copied in Harleian Publications, Vol. 59, Pt. 1. It shows:

"Robarte, s. of Wm. Symes, Mch. 23, 1578."

"Elnor, d. Wm. Symes, Nov. 12, 1581."

"Mary, d. Wm. Symes, Jany. 7, 1583."

William evidently acquired his father's Dorsetshire manor, as would appear from Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 92 A, showing a female descent.

Robert and James are referred to here merely as showing the early appearance of those names in the Symes family, and easily accounting for the recurrence of those names in the Symes lines in Isle of Wight

County, Virginia, in 1674 and later, as heretofore referred to in this essay.

Let us now take up the second and third sons of John Symes of Poundsford, who was the first son of Wm. Symes of Chard. They were Henry and Thomas, residuary legatees and executors of his will.⁴

Henry married Amye (or Ann), daughter of Sir John Seymour, Kt. His will was dated Jany. 28, 1678, proved Feb. 12, 1682, and the abstract of it appears in Brown's Abstracts, 2nd Series, p. 54. He evidently left no son; for a note to the abstract gives the names of his four daughters, Susan Jacob, Frances (d. 1671), Eleanor (d. 1672), Jane, who married Edward Byssæ, and Elizabeth, who married Richard Berkeley. This is sustained by the will of Sir John Seymour, dated June 14, 1663, and proved Feb. 17, 1664, abstracted in Brown's Abstracts, First Series, p. 54, which refers to his daughter Ann Symes and her five children.

The importance of the fact that this Henry Symes, who is referred to in other wills as Harry Symes, left no son is that in Brown's Abstracts, 4th Series, p. 84, there is a will of Wm. Phillippes, of Preston Plunkett, Somerset, dated Feb. 19, 1713, proved May 21, 1714, in which the testator mentions his only sister, Bridget "Seymer," and his "nephews John and Edward Symes, sons of my nephew, Henry Symes." Who these nephews were cannot be told. They were not sons of Henry Symes of Antigua, brother of Captain George Symes of Antigua; for that Henry had no sons named John and Edward.

The third son of John Symes of Poundsford was Thomas; and this Thomas was the father of Captain George Symes of Antigua, and the grandfather of George Symes of Isle of Wight County, Virginia.

⁴See p. 59, *supra*.

Thomas Symes must have been born about 1605, as his oldest brother had a six-months-old son in 1623; but owing probably to the uncertain conditions obtaining in Somersetshire at that time, he did not marry until 1640. He married Amy, daughter of Edward Bridges, Esq., of Keynsham, County Somerset. In Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, 1st. Series, p. 48, is the will of Edward Bridges, dated Nov. 7, 1638, proved Aug. 22, 1639, by his son, Thomas. The will names his sons, Thomas, Edward, and George, and his daughters, Elizabeth, Katherine, Amy, and Phillipa; and on page 40 of Brown's 1st. Series is the line of Edward Bridges' descendants; which shows that Elizabeth Bridges married John Langton in 1652, and that Amy married Thomas Symes twelve years earlier—1640, although Amy was the younger sister.

Thomas Symes' wife Amy must have died about 1663. She was dead when Elizabeth, wife of John Langton, died in 1703, as we may see from Elizabeth's will; and as it must have been this Thomas Symes who first obtained a grant of land in Antigua about that time, as shown in the last Chapter, it may be assumed that Amy, wife of Thomas Symes, died shortly after her twelfth child was born.

The names of their children appear in two wills, first in that of Elizabeth Symes, spinster, in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, 1st. Series, p. 53, dated Nov. 22, 1675, and proved July 12, 1676. She calls herself of Doynton, Gloucester. She names her brothers, Henry, George, and Richard, giving them £5 each; rings to her brothers Edward and John and also £5 to each of them; £5 to her brother William; a silver cup to her brother Charles; and a ring to her brother Thomas. She also names her sisters Amy, Katherine, and Mary.⁵ But

⁵Elizabeth Symes' will is copied in full in "Adam Symes and His Descendants" by Mrs. Jane Morris, p. 370.

her will clearly pays no attention to the order of the births of the brothers and sister.

The other will naming the children of Thomas and Amy Symes is that of her sister Elizabeth Langton, dated Feb. 12, 1696, with a codicil dated Jany. 13, 1699, the probate being had Apr. 24, 1703. The will of Elizabeth Langton is abstracted in Brown's Somerset Wills, Fourth Series, p. 30; and as that will contains much more valuable evidence than that of her niece Elizabeth Symes the will of Elizabeth Langton is given in full in Appendix III of this essay. Mrs. Jane Morris procured from England a copy of the will itself.

After the abstract to the will in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills is a note that she was the wife of John Langton, of Keynsham, Somerset; that she survived her husband forty years, dying at the age of 83; that she was married at Keynsham, July 3, 1652.

John Langton's will is also abstracted in Brown's Fourth Series, p. 29, and shows that it was probated 12, 3, 1661.

The Symes Pedigree in Volume III of Oliver's History of Antigua, p. 110, gives the order of the children of Thomas and Amy Symes. See Appendix II to this essay. And from that it appears the order was as follows:

1. Thomas Symes of Barwick, birth not given, will proved 14 Jan., 1682;
2. John, birth not given, dead 1687;
3. Edward, baptised 1645, at Doynton, Co. Gloucester, alive in 1712;
4. Rev. Charles, born (by calculation from his graduation from Magdalin College, Oxford, in March, 1665-6, at 17) in 1649;
5. George, of Antigua, by calculation, about 1651;
6. Henry, of Antigua, baptized 16 Nov. 1653, at Doynton;

7. William;
8. Richard, born 1656, as he died 27 May, 1728, at 72;

Amy, Katherine, and Elizabeth were the daughters named; but we have seen that there was a fourth daughter, Mary, their birth-dates not being given.

1. *Thomas Symes*. We learn from the Antigua pedigree that Thomas attended Christ Church College, Oxford, and that he was a barrister of Lincoln's Inn in 1666; that he married Merrial (Muriel?) the youngest daughter of Sir John Horner, and that there was a marriage settlement in 1666.

It is likely that this settlement was of the manor of Barwick, as Thomas was called Thomas Symes of Barwick; and that the manor held by Thomas was in tail, received by him from his father, Thomas Symes, Sr., with remainder to his brothers in tail, so that after the death of Thomas, and the dower interest of Muriel, if they should leave no issue, it would pass to his next brother John and his issue, probably likewise in tail.

Thomas Symes died about Jany. 1, 1682, or probably just before his will was proved. The abstract of his will is in Brown, 1st. Series, p. 54, and left everything he had to his wife Muriel.

Muriel's will, dated July 4, 1710, proved 26 July, 1717, is in Brown, 1st. Series, p. 55, calls herself of Barwick, Somerset, and disposes of considerable personal property, including many jewels. Neither her will nor her husband's refers to any issue. But in the notes after the Antigua Symes pedigree in Oliver's History of Antigua, it appears that they had a son named John, born in 1667, who attended Exeter College, Oxford, was a student at Lincoln's Inn, and died at the age of 20 with small-pox.

2. *John Symes*, referred to as dead in Elizabeth Langton's will, evidently went in his youth to the island of Montserrat in the West Indies, where he must have married the wife referred to by Elizabeth Langton. The Antigua pedigree refers to him as "Captain" and member of the Council of the Island in 1678, and dead in 1687.

He left a son John, whose will is abstracted in Brown's Somerset Wills, 2nd. Series, p. 55. He is called John Symes of Montserrat, in the regiment of Lieut.-General Witham. The will is dated April 2, 1709, and was proved Jany. 20, 1712-13; and Antigua notes say that he was killed in battle at Port Mahon. He was unmarried.

He leaves his plantation in Montserrat to "my nephew and godson Symes Parry, son of Samuel Parry, of Antigua, gent, by Elizabeth, my sister." He refers to the children of his sister Amy Thompson of Montserrat, and the children of his sister Katherine Loyd of Antigua; showing that he had no brothers.

But he also says that he owns an estate in England in the possession of Muriel Symes, and leaves that also to his nephew Symes Parry, requiring him to take the surname of Symes.

There was a suit in chancery, referred to in the notes after the Symes pedigree in Vol. III of Oliver's Antigua, brought in 1712 by Symes Parry against Muriel Symes, alleging that she had conspired with Edward Symes to cut off John Symes' issue from the estate in England. The papers in that suit have not been found; but Edward Symes filed an answer to the bill; so he was living at that time; and Elizabeth Langton's will shows that Edward had children when her will was made in 1696.

3. *Edward Symes*. We know nothing more about Edward than has been stated, except that he probably

married Oct. 12, 1676. In a volume of "Marriage Licenses in Bath and Wells Before 1755," in the New York Public Library (No. ARX), on page 7, in a note, is the record of a marriage on Oct. 12, 1676, of "Edward Symes of Bridgewater and Susanna Champion, widow"; and in another volume in the New York Library, called "Marriage Licenses in Bath and Wells," on page 395, is another record of the same marriage as, "Edward Syms of Bridgewater m. Susanna Champion, 12 Oct. 1676. John Syms, widower, of Bleadon, his bondsman." It would not seem likely that two pairs of young men named John and Edward Syms would have been in Somersetshire at the same time. But a little below the above record in the latter volume is "John Sims, aged 26 of Bridgewater, married Elizabeth Watts of Loneting, 10/31, 1676." So that is confusing. But as Edward Symes, the son of Thomas, was baptized in 1645, as shown in the Antigua pedigree, if he married Susanna Champion in 1676, they certainly were not the parents of any of the Virginians we have been trying to identify from 1674 to 1687.

4. *Charles Symes*, according to the Antigua pedigree, matriculated at Magdalen College, Oxford, March 2, 1665-6 (which means 1666), at the age of 17, making his birth 1649. But the Harleian Publication, Volume 28, "Marriage Licenses at the Faculty Office, London," p. 180, shows, "June 21, 1686, Charles Symes, Rector of Compton-Martyn, Co. Somerset, Bach. 36, and Anne Creed of the Close of Salisbury, Spr. 28"; which would make his birth in 1650.

He graduated, B.A., 1669, M.A., 1672; was rector in 1674; canon in 1679, and died in 1707, according to the Antigua pedigree.

Elizebeth Langton, his aunt, in her will (Appendix III) refers to "Ann, wife of my nephew Charles Symes"; and made Charles one of her executors. Also

John Symes of Montserrat, in his will, dated 4, 2, 1709, abstracted in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, 1st. Series, p. 55, gives to his uncle, "Charles Symes of Compton-Martin, Somerset, Clerk, £100"; and provided further, "His son, William Symes, to be presented to the vicarage of Barwick." However, if Charles died in 1707, before John of Montserrat, his legacy lapsed, and unless Symes Parry recovered the manor of Barwick from his Aunt Muriel, in the unfollowed law suit, Charles' son did not get the vicarage.

5. *George Symes*, who went to Antigua, we believe in 1671, was the fifth son of Thomas Symes, in whose descendants our chief interest centers.

6. *Henry Symes*. According to the Antigua pedigree, Henry was baptized 16 Nov., 1653, at Doynton, Co. Gloucester. He is referred to in the will of Elizabeth Langton (See Appendix III) and also in the will of her husband, John Langton, both of which are in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, and are referred to above. He evidently emigrated to Antigua much later than his brother George. He received a grant of 100 acres there in 1682, and became a captain in the insular troupes. He married there Henrietta, a widow, and sister of the wife of Governor Yeamans, and was registrar of Antigua. He died in 1714, and was buried at St. Johns, leaving, according to the Antigua Symes pedigree in Oliver's History of Antigua, four children, Henry (who also became a captain), Richard, James, and Elizabeth. There is nothing to prove that any of Henry's three sons emigrated from Antigua to Virginia; although Richard may have done so.

7. *William Symes*, the seventh son of Thomas, according to the Antigua pedigree, was not kept up with by the Antigua branch of the family, as that record merely says that he was living in 1675; which was the

date of his sister Elizabeth's will. However, he may not have been alive at the date of his Aunt Elizabeth Langton's will, 1696; for she does not leave him a bequest, as she does to Edward, Charles, and Henry, nephews whom we know to have been alive at the time; and yet she gives bequests to his wife, without referring to her as a widow, as she does in the case of the widow of her nephew, John. But she gives nothing to her nephew, Richard Symes; and we know that he was alive in 1696. So we cannot assume that William was dead.

The will of Elizabeth Langton gives to "William Symes, Thomas Symes and Richard Symes, sons of my nephew William Symes, the sum of ten pounds apiece" and to their sister Amy Symes ten pounds; and the codicil, added in 1703, gives to "my neece Amy Symes, daughter of my nephew William Symes" a large quantity of furniture together with a share of the unspecified furniture. She also leaves "Mary," William's wife, and "Mary," Richard's wife, five pounds apiece.

In 1698, there was issued a grant of land in New Kent County, Virginia, by Governor Nott to William Symes (presumably 950 acres—50 acres for each person), for bringing nineteen persons into the Colony of Virginia. The record copy of the grant is in Land Book 9, p. 713, in the Virginia State Land Office in Richmond. A second grant was made to him in 1705 for 450 acres "late in the possession of John Stevens." This latter grant was for land recovered by escheat, "as by requisition recorded in the Secretary's Office, under the hand and seal of John Lightfoot, Escheater of said County," "for which said William Sims, hath made his composition, according to said letters patent." The actual grant was to "William Sims of New Kent County," recorded Nov. 2, 1705, Land Book 9, p. 713, in the State Land Office. William Symes had only 600

acres listed on the quit rent rolls in 1704, however, being in New Kent County.

William Symes was careful about the spelling of his name, for in Vol. 4 of the Virginia Executive Council Journal is a list of errors in the spelling of "Symes" in William's name, in order that the record in the company's office in London might conform to the record in Virginia.

The wife of William Symes of New Kent County, Virginia, was named Mary and they had a daughter named Ann; for in Bruton and Middleton Parish Register in Virginia, on page 108, is an entry that Ann, daughter of William and Mary Sims, died August 18, 1714.

Elizabeth Langton's will (Appendix III) refers to her niece Amy, daughter of her Nephew, William Symes, and Amy was probably correct; but all through the abstracts of the wills the names, Amy and Ann, seem to have been confused, the abstract of Elizabeth Langton's will even referring to William's daughter as Ann. So the Virginia parish register may well have carried her name as Ann, when it should have been Amy.

But other Virginia data corroborate the emigration of William and his family from Somersetshire to Virginia. Another "William Sims," who must have been the son of William Symes of New Kent, received a grant of 95 acres, dated July 9, 1724, in Surry County, Virginia, for bringing two persons into the Colony. The 95 acres lay on the south side of Blackwater Swamp. See Land Book 12, p. 104, in the Land Office in Richmond. 1724 was too early for this William to have been the William who was the son of Adam Sims, who was born about 1715, according to the estimate of Mrs. Jane Morris in her essay on "Adam Symes and His Descendants." Indeed Adam's son William was probably named

for his great-uncle, William Symes, of New Kent. So William Sims of Surry must have been the oldest son of William of New Kent.

Again, there was a Thomas Sims in Spotsylvania County in 1734 (just north of Louisa County), who had married Rebecca Harrelson, daughter of Paul Harrelson of New Kent County prior to 1718. The will of Paul Harrelson of St. Paul's Parish, New Kent County, was dated 18 Aug., 1718, and mentions his wife Rebecca, sons Peter and Paul, daughters Ann Chiles and Judith and granddaughter, Rebecca Sims, to whom he gave a slave-girl. Paul Harrelson's will may be found in the Order Book for 1733, Hanover County wills, and has been abstracted in Vol. VI, p. 19, "Virginia County Records," in all libraries. Paul Harrelson's will was not probated until Apr. 5, 1731.

In Deed Book C (1734-42), Spottsylvania County, is the record of a lease, dated Oct. 23, 1734, from Alexander Spottswood, Esq., to Thomas Sims, Planter, of 108 acres of land in St. Mark's Parish, Spottsylvania County (See Vol. 1, Virginia County Records, Spottsylvania County), which lease refers to "Thomas Sims and Rebecca his wife and Thomas ye son of sd. Thomas Senior." Also in the same volume of Virginia County Records, reprint, on p. 46, is a deed in Spottsylvania County, dated Jan. 27, 1737, from one Thomas Grayson to one Thomas Turner, which is witnessed by "Ignat's Simms" and "Peter Simms." Also in the same reprint volume, p. 60, giving administrators' bonds in Spottsylvania County, is a bond dated Aug. 4, 1760, of the administration of William Sims, deceased. So Thomas Sims, of Spottsylvania, was evidently a son of William Symes of New Kent.

William Symes, Sr., "dyed" in New Kent, "Febry. 17th 1725-6," according to an entry in St. Peter's Parish Register in the State Library in Richmond; and we

have found that he must have been the father of a daughter, "Ann," a son, William, and a son, Thomas, just as had William Symes, seventh son of Thomas Symes of Barwick, Somersetshire.

But what became of his son Richard? A Richard Sims was on a tything list in Orange County in 1734. See Vol. 27, Wm. & Mary Quarterly; but he may have been a son of Thomas and Rebecca.

It is quite possible that Richard the youngest son of William Symes never came to Virginia.

William, the oldest son of William, who obtained 95 acres in Surry County in 1724, evidently moved later to Edgecombe County, North Carolina, and died there in 1755. See Grimm's North Carolina Wills, which are alphabetically listed.

8. *Richard Symes*, the youngest son of Thomas and Amy Symes, by the Antigua pedigree, died May 27, 1728, at the age of 72; which would make his birth 1656. . He is there called Richard Symes of Black Meath and is said to have been married three times. In Brown's Abstracts of Somersetshire Wills, 4th. Series, p. 71, is the abstracted will, and it bears the same date as is given for it in the Antigua pedigree, July 17, 1723. But the abstract refers to him as Richard Symes of Lewisham, Kent. Each record gives the date of probate as Aug. 20, 1728. The will settled his estate on "Richard, son of my *late* brother Wm. Symes, remainder to my great nephew Richard Symes, son of my nephew Thomas Symes, remainder to eldest son of said Thomas, remainder to his brother Wm. Symes, Clerk." He names his nephew, Thomas, and brother, William, nephew, John Meredith, and nephew, Richard Symes, Executors.

All these provisions do not quite harmonize with these nephews being in Virginia. And the reference to his *late* brother William in a will dated July 17,

1723, when William Symes of New Kent County, Virginia, did not die until February 17, 1726, is of course in conflict with the William in Virginia being his brother. But the coincidence of the names of William Symes, his wife Mary and his three children in Virginia, with the names in England of William, Mary, Ann or Amy, William, Thomas and Richard, would seem to be almost convincing proof of the emigration of William and his family to Virginia.

Of course the entry in St. Peter's Parish Register of the death of Wm. Symes on Feby. 17, 1725-6, may have been a mistake, or the date of Richard's will as given in the copies of the records may be a mistake. Instead of 1723, it could have been July 17, 1726, as Richard's will was not probated until 1728.

Having established the Symes descent of George Symes of Antigua, let us trace out some of his ancestors in the female lines.

Robert Hill of Yard, or Yarde, in Somersetshire was a member of the English gentry like William Symes of Chard, who married Robert's daughter, Elizabeth. He was evidently of a wealthy, though not a prominent family. A coat of arms and a crest were granted to his grandfather, William Hill, by the same herald, Cooke, but twenty-one years earlier than arms were granted to William Symes. The Hill arms were granted in 1570, to William Hill of Yarde, grandfather of Robert and were Gules, a cheveron engrailed ermine between three garbs, or, all within a bordure, argent. Crest: a dove, rising, azure, legged gules, holding in her beak an oak branch, vert, fructed, or.

The record of the grant and the Hill pedigree from William Hill is in Volume 11 of the Publications of the Harleian Society, Visitation of Somerset, 1623, on page 50. It is copied in Appendix VI (post).

John Symes of Poundsford, son and heir of William Symes of Chard, and the grandfather of George

Symes of Antigua, married Amy, daughter of Thomas Horner of Mell, or of Mell's Park, as he is referred to by some genealogists. And Thomas Horner was evidently a well-known, if not a notorious character. He must have been a member of the group close to the Court who obtained a share in the confiscated wealth of the monasteries, after they were abolished, as we have seen in 1536, by King Henry the Eighth and his Parliament.

Thomas Horner, however, did not obtain a grant of arms. The Horner arms and crest were granted to his son and heir-at-law, John Horner, who also obtained a knighthood, and no doubt much more doubtfully gained wealth. Thomas Horner is said by the editor of Burke's Landed Gentry (Colonial and American edition of 1939) to have been a member of Parliament for Somerset in 1584 and 1586, and Sheriff of Somersetshire in 1607. The same authority informed the author of this essay that the Horner family is perpetuated in the old Mother Goose rhyme, "Little Jack Horner sat in the corner eating his Christmas pie. He stuck in his thumb and pulled out a plum, and said 'what a great boy am I.' " And there seems to have been another local satire pointed at the family, which ran,

"Wyndham, Horner, Popham, and Thynne,
When the Abbot went out, they came in."

The abbott referred to was the Abbot of Glastonbury.

In a recent newspaper cartoon by "Ripley," also, a picture of a mansion is said to be the picture of "the house that Jack built," meaning Jack Horner.

The Horner arms and crest, granted to Sir John Horner in 1584 also appear in the Visitation of Somerset, 1623, and are reprinted in the same Volume 11 of

the Harleian Publications, page 57. They are "Sable, three talbots passant, argent. Crest: a talbot sejant argent, collared and chained, or."

Now, Thomas Horner married first Amy, a daughter of Chief Justice Popham of the King's Bench; and it will be recalled that William Symes of Chard in his will (*supra*) refers to financial dealings which he had had with Chief Justice Popham.

Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, Fifth Series, page 107, gives an abstract of the will of Alexander Popham, of Huntsworth, Somerset: will dated June 1, 1555, proved July 2, 1555. He names "my son John Popham and Amye his wife"; and a note says that John Popham was "Lord Chief Justice, temp. Queen Eliz."

The will of "Sir John Popham, Kt., Lord Chief Justice," is also abstracted in Brown's Abstracts of Somerset Wills, 5th. Series, on page 108, the abstract being as follows: "Will dated Sept. 21, 1604, proved June 17, 1608. Establishes a Hospital at Wellington, Somerset. My sons-in-law Sir John Mallet, Edward Rogers, Sir Richard Champernoun, Thomas Horner, and Roger Warre. To Sarah, daughter of my nephew Ferdinand Popham [Note: son of his brother Edward] decd., £10. My daughters Penelope Hanham, Ellinor Warre, Elizabeth Champernoun, Katherine Rogers and Mary Mallett. John Horner, son of my daughter Horner. My friend and cousin Edward Popham of Huntsworth, James Clark, esq. Sir Randall Brereton, Will Poole, Bartholemew Michell. My grandchild Amy Pyne & her husband. My son Sir Francis Popham."

The only Popham arms and pedigree given in the Visitation of 1623, Volume 11 of the Harleian Reprint, are those of Edward Popham of Huntsworth, evidently Sir John's brother noted in the footnote to Sir John's will (*supra*). But the arms are quartered, showing that they were not newly granted; and they were con-

firmed by Chief Justice Popham himself, whatever may have been his authority to do so. So the original Popham arms must have been much older, probably specially granted by King Henry VIII to Sir John's father, or even at an earlier date. They are given in Berry's *Encyclopoedia of Heraldry* as follows: "Argent, on a chief, gules, two bucks' heads, cabossed, or. Crest: a stag's head erased, proper."

Edward Foss F.S.A., of the Inner Temple, in his "*Biographical Dictionary of the Judges of England*,"⁶ probably the most authoritative writer on the old English Judges, says of Lord Chief Justice Popham:

"Popham, John, was descended from a family settled at Popham, a hamlet in Hampshire, early in the twelfth century. The estate of Huntworth in Somersetshire was acquired in marriage in the reign of Edward I; and there John, the future chief justice, was born about the year 1531, being the second son of Alexander (or, as some say, Edward) Popham, of that place, by his wife Jane, the daughter of Sir Edward Stradling, of St. Donat's Castle, Glamorganshire.

He received his education at Balliol College, Oxford, whence he removed to the Middle Temple to pursue the study of the law. Instead of doing this, tradition charges him with entering into wild courses, and even with being wont to take a purse with his profligate companions. However this may be, he must have soon reformed, and, as Fuller says (ii 284), 'applied himself to a more profitable fencing;' for he does not seem to have been delayed in obtaining the usual honours of his society. His nomination as reader took place in 1568, when he was thirty-seven years old; and he became treasurer twelve years afterwards (*Dugdale's Orig.* 217, 221). In the interval between these two dates he had obtained, as member for Bristol, a seat in parliament, where in 1571, when the subsidy was under discussion, he joined with Mr. Bell (the future chief baron) in call-

⁶Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1870.

ing for the correction of some abuses, and pointed out the evil of allowing the treasurers of the crown to retain in their hands 'great masses of money,' of which, becoming bankrupt, they only repaid an instalment. In the next year he was one of the committee appointed to confer with the Lords on the subject of the Queen of Scots (Parl. Hist. i. 735, 779).

He was called to the degree of the coif on January 28, 1578; and in the following year he was offered the place of solicitor-general. This office being inferior in rank to that of a serjeant-at-law, he obtained a patent exonerating him from the latter degree, and was thereupon appointed solicitor-general on June 26, 1579 (Dugdale's Orig. 127). While holding that office he was elected speaker of the House of Commons in January, 1581; and some idea may be formed of his wit, and also of the lightness of the parliamentary labours during that session, by his reply to Queen Elizabeth, when, on his attending her on some occasion, she said, 'Well, Mr. Speaker, what hath passed in the Lower House?' he answered, 'If it please your majesty, seven weeks.' His last and indeed principal duty in this capacity was the making the customary speech to the queen on presenting the subsidy voted at the end of the session. This was on March 18, after which that parliament never again met (Parl. Hist. i. 311, 828).

On June 1, 1581, he became attorney-general, and held that office for eleven years, during which he took part in all those criminal trials, the perusal of which, even where the guilt of the prisoners is most apparent, cannot but excite feelings of indignation at the gross injustice of the proceedings. His conduct in them, however, is not chargeable with any unnecessary harshness; and even in the opening of the unwarrantable charge against Secretary Davison he performed the difficult duty without any words of aggravation (State Trials, i. 1051-1321).

His elevation to the office of lord chief justice of the King's Bench took place on June 2, 1592, when he was immediately knighted. He presided in that court for the fifteen remaining years of his life—

eleven under Queen Elizabeth, and four under King James.

He accompanied Lord Keeper Egerton in February 1600 to the Earl of Essex's house, as already related; and when Sir Ferdinando Gorges offered to deliver him from his forced detention there, he refused to depart without his companions in confinement, saying that 'as they came together, so would they go together, or die together.' This fact is not mentioned at the earl's trial, either in the chief justice's evidence or in Gorges' examination; but it is related by himself on the subsequent trial of Sir Christopher Blunt and others implicated in this insurrection, at which was exhibited the unbecoming spectacle of prisoners tried, and sentence pronounced, by a judge who had himself been a sufferer (*Ibid.* i. 1340, 1344, 1428).

One of his earliest duties after the accession of James was to preside at the trial of Sir Walter Raleigh—stained not only by a conviction founded on weak and unsatisfactory evidence, but also by that disgusting conduct towards the prisoner of Sir Edward Coke, which will ever disgrace his name, and for which the chief justice felt himself called upon to apologise, saying to Sir Walter, 'Mr. Attorney speaketh out of the zeal of his duty for the service of the king, and you for your life; be valiant on both sides' (*Ibid.* ii. 10). He would have done better to have silenced the brutal tongue.

The last state trials which he presided over were those against the conspirators in the Gunpowder Plot, finishing with that of Garnet the Jesuit, on March 28, 1606 (*Ibid.* ii. 159, 217). He was then seventy-five years old; but he sat on the bench for another year, pronouncing a judgment in the Court of Wards as late as Easter Term 1607. On June 10, in the following term, he died, and was buried under a magnificent tomb in the church of Wellington in Somersetshire, where he had long resided in a stately house he had erected, and to which he left a testimony of his charity and goodwill by the foundation of a hospital for the maintenance of twelve poor and aged people" (pp. 526, 527).

After Sir Walter Raleigh had made two unsuccessful attempts to establish a colony in America on the North Carolina coast, the London Company was formed, composed of merchants and gentlemen adventurers of London; and under a charter from James I, this company made the settlement at Jamestown Island in Virginia, in 1607, which was the first successful English settlement in America. To gain prestige for the formation of the company, its organizers obtained the name of Chief Justice Popham as one of its patrons.⁷ His brother George joined in the scheme which included a proposed colony at the same time in New England under an identical charter from King James. In 1606, George Popham went with the group which tried to establish settlement in New England, fourteen years before the Mayflower landing; but the settlement failed after George Popham died there.⁸

So the Popham family from which George Symes was descended was at least connected with the earliest English settlements, both in New England and in Virginia.

⁷Bancroft's History of U. S., Chapter IV.

⁸There seems to be some doubt whether the New England Colony was organized under the same charter, or under an identical charter. The New England venture was composed of West of England merchants, largely of Bristol, and the Virginia venture was supported by the London Group. Historian's History of the World, Vol. 22, p. 611. But as the Popham family lived in Somersetshire, and the Chief Justice sat in London, the connection of the Pophams with both, would seem to prove their unity.

CHAPTER VI.

THE CHILDREN OF GEORGE SYMES OF ISLE OF WIGHT AND
SURRY COUNTIES.

We have seen that the wife of George Symes was named Elizabeth.¹ He was either dead in 1712, or had followed his two sons John and Matthew to New Kent County at that time, as a suit which he had filed in Surry County was dismissed for want of prosecution on June 20, 1711.² That he had either died, or had moved to New Kent is borne out by an entry in St. Peter's Parish Register for New Kent County (page 444 of the reprint) that "Elizabeth Sims dyed Feb. 26, 1725/6." But as the Journal of the Executive Council (Vol. III, p. 496 of the reprint), shows that on March 11, 1718, "George Symms" was granted leave to take up 3,000 acres in New Kent County near the foot of "Little Mountains";³ and as Volume IV, page 39 of the reprint, shows that May 24, 1723, an order was made approving a grant to John, Matthew, and "Jno." Symes of 3,000 acres of land on Locust Creek, Hanover County (which was cut off from New Kent in 1720), it is probable that George Symes lived until after 1718, and was dead before 1723. The grant of the 3,000 acres was issued to John, Matthew and George Sims by Robert Carter, President of the Council, under date of June 16, 1727. The description is by metes and bounds to trees and lines of others' holdings. One point is on "George Sims' line"; but that signifies nothing, as George Sims

¹See Chapter I, p. 21, *supra*.

²See Chapter I, Footnote 29, p. 24, *supra*.

³All the related grants are relisted in Appendix IV, not merely that to John, Matthew and George Sims, June 16, 1727, but others to Adam, John, Matthew, George and Edward Sims individually. The grants are all by metes and bounds, and furnish little opportunity to check the position of the land. They merely show that all the individual grants were of adjoining lands or lands in close proximity.

already had received grants of 200 and 400 acres individually in 1725; and as the grants were made out at Williamsburg, the lines were probably written impersonally, although the George Sims in the three deeds was the same man.

Evidently then, John, Matthew, and George Sims were three of George Sims' sons. And it will be noted that the name is spelt "Sims" almost universally from the time they appear in New Kent, or the part of New Kent which became Hanover County.

The juxtaposition of the name of an Edward Sims to those of the above three, John, Matthew, and George Sims, both in the records of processionings for taxes in St. Paul's Parish, of New Kent and later Hanover County, and also the grants to Edward Sims of adjacent land, indicate that Edward Sims was also a son of George and Elizabeth Symes, although Edward did not join his brothers John, Matthew, and George in taking up the 3,000 acres after their father's death.

We have also seen in the last Chapter that Mary Snead was evidently a daughter of George and Elizabeth Sims and a sister of John, Matthew, George, and Edward.

Were there any other children? From other grants of the same period to Adam Sims and George Sims in Brunswick County, which adjoined Surry, and from the will of "Adam Symes" dated March 15, 1732, probated in Brunswick County July 15, 1733, and which is preserved⁴ giving the names of Adam's children, it is evident that Adam Symes was also a son of George and Elizabeth Symes; and as the name "Adam" can be accounted for only as "the first man," it is probable that Adam was the oldest son, and as such inherited the two hundred acres accredited to George Sims of Surry on the Quit Rent Rolls of 1704.

⁴See "Adam Symes and His Descendants" by Mrs. Jane Morris, p. 29, Phila.: Dorrance & Co., 1938.

There may also have been a son, James, younger than the others, being the James Sims who with Edward Sims executed as co-surety the administrator's bond of George Sims in 1735, when he became administrator of the estate of Matthew Snead, as shown in the last preceding Chapter.

There also appears in St. Peter's Parish Register (reprint, p. 485) the entry, "Edward, son of Eliz. Parish, which is now the wife of James Sims, was born May 20, 1730." And as the name James appears repeatedly in the next generation of Simses, as we shall see, it can best be accounted for by there having been a son of George and Elizabeth by the name of James. Furthermore, on page 491 of St. Peter's Parish Register is the entry, "Elizabeth, d. of James Sims, b. July ye 28th 1725." But while this entry seems to prove that James was a son of George and Elizabeth Sims, Elizabeth the infant may have been named for Elizabeth Parish, James' wife; and it may have been this infant who died Feb. 26, 1725/6 (which means 1726), and not Elizabeth the wife of George the father.

But what was the family name of Elizabeth, George Symes' wife? The probability is that her name was Sherwood. One of her sons, and possibly two, as we shall see, had sons named Sherwood; and there is no other way to account so well for the name Sherwood as that it was the name of their mother's family.

In the published volume of "Abstracts of Lower Norfolk Wills," p. 76, is the will of John White, from Book 4, f. 98, of the County records. The will is dated 9 Feb. 1680, proved 11 May 1681, and gives to the testator's son-in-law James Sherwood all his land, naming him as executor. He also names James, the son of James. The witnesses were Alexander Keeling and John Corperhew.

In Volume 3 of William and Mary Quarterly, first series, p. 96, there is a deed from John White to James

Sherwood, and another deed from James Sherwood and Grace (evidently his wife) to John White, 1690, in Norfolk or Princess Anne County. Norfolk County is just east of Isle of Wight, and Princess Anne is just east of Norfolk; and they both constituted Lower Norfolk in 1681. But if James Sherwood was already married in 1680-1, when he received the lands of his father-in-law by will, he may well have had a daughter Elizabeth,⁵

⁵If Elizabeth Sims was the daughter of James and Grace Sherwood, of Lower Norfolk or Princess Anne County, Elizabeth was a daughter of the Grace Sherwood who was tried under an indictment as a witch in Princess Anne County from January 3, 1705 to July 10, 1706, and was kept in jail until September 1, 1708, when she confessed judgment for payment to the County of six hundred pounds of tobacco and costs, including an additional five hundred pounds of tobacco to Maximilian Boush, Queen's Attorney, for prosecuting her, assessed and apparently paid October 26, 1708.

The story of the "Case of Grace Sherwood" is told fully in 3 William & Mary Quarterly, 1st. series, pp. 96 to 101, 190 to 192, 242 to 245, and 4 William & Mary Quarterly, 1st. series, pp. 18 to 22. It is also told fully in 3 Lower Norfolk, Virginia, Antiquary, beginning on page 52, and it is also told briefly in 5 Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, p. 331. The facts seem to have been gathered by Edward W. James.

The case started and developed as follows:

In March 1697-8 James Sherwood and Grace his wife sued Richard Capps for defamation, and the case was settled. Then in September, 1698, they sued John Gisburne and his wife for defamation in having accused Grace of bewitching her pigs; and there was a verdict for the defendants. Then they sued Anthony Barnes and his wife for accusing Grace of coming to their house and riding Mrs. Barnes, and then disappearing through the key-hole.

James Sherwood died in 1701, and Grace was granted letters of administration on his estate; which left her without his protection. So when she sued Luke Hill and his wife in 1705 for assault and battery upon her, they accused her of being a witch, and procured an indictment against her as such. One of the proofs in those days of being a witch was possessing more than two breasts. So the Court appointed a jury of women to examine Grace in the premises, to which she consented, with the result that the jury found "two things like titts, with several spotts" upon her body. This impressed the Court; so they kept poor Grace in jail; and on July 10, 1706, ordered another witch test to be made of her, which was to tie her thumbs to her toes cross-wise, and thus tied to put her into the water to see if she could swim; but the court order benignly cautioned that care be taken that she should not be drowned. Grace consented to take this test also. So she was ducked in Lynnhaven Bay at a spot known

born about 1674 or 1675, who married the lad George Symes of Isle of Wight early in 1689, when George Symes was about seventeen years old—not an uncommon age for boys to marry in those days, even in England.

If so, Adam Symes, their first son, was born at the end of 1689 or early in 1690,⁶ John, the second son must have been born late in 1690, Matthew in 1691, and the other children later. Or John and Matthew may have been twins.

This necessary proximity of the births of the first three sons arises from the fact that 'St. Peter's Parish Register (reprint, p. 416) shows that on March 3, 1708, Matthew Sims was married to Hannah Mitchell, and

as "Witch-duck," to this day, the Court apparently attending the proceeding in banc. Again they were too doubtful to order her released. So she remained in jail until September 1, 1708, when she confessed to the charge of being a witch, and paid her fine and costs, as stated above.

Notwithstanding this harrowing experience, and the payment of this fine and heavy costs, Grace Sherwood was evidently still well-to-do. In 1714 she acquired a grant of one hundred and forty-five acres of land additional to what she had received from her father, John White, by will in 1681 (*Supra*), although she probably had sold that inheritance during her distress. She lived until 1740, leaving a will dated August 20, 1733, by which she gave her 144 acres of land, 'on which she was living,' and all her personalty to her son John, making him executor of her will. The will mentions two other sons, James and Richard, to whom she gave only five shillings apiece; and she mentions no daughters. But we have seen that Elizabeth Sims died February 26, 1725/6; and if the entry in St. Paul's Parish Register (*supra*, p. 80) was of the death of George Sims' wife, so that she was dead before the making of Grace Sherwood's will in 1733, Elizabeth's not being mentioned in the will, is not proof that she was not Grace Sherwood's daughter. True, one would expect Grace Sherwood to have given something to some of the sons of Elizabeth and George Sims, if they were her grandchildren. But they were a great distance away in 1733; and there may well have been a family estrangement due to the horrible experience which befell Grace. Moreover Grace gave every thing she had but ten shillings to one of her three sons; so why should she have given anything to her grandsons, who were quite well established at that time?

⁶Mrs. Jane Morris guesses 1789. See her book, "Adam Symes and His Descendants" p. 30.

that he had a daughter named Ann born January 29, 1709. So Matthew was barely seventeen when he married, or he and John were twins, born in 1690, which is not improbable.

Photostatic copies of entries in St. Paul's Vestry Book show that John and Matthew Sims were in actual possession of land in New Kent County as early as 1708, and that George and Edward joined them in 1711, and that they continued to reside near each other for many years, or probably until their respective deaths.

John Sims first acquired a grant of additional land in 1719, as appears from the listing of his grant of that year in Appendix IV. And John obtained another grant in 1725, when George and Matthew also obtained further grants. In 1727 the three received the grant for 3,000 acres, evidently the land applied for by George Sims, believed to be their father, in 1718; and in 1728 Edward received a grant of 400 acres adjoining them. James bought from one Montray 400 acres in 1733.

The fact that John and Matthew appear in 1708 as the first settlers of the four, and George and Edward in 1711, would indicate that they were settling on the thousand acres of land taken in the name of John Sims in 1704, as shown by the Quit Rent Rolls; and the fact that Matthew was married in January, 1708, as we have seen above, shows that he was just starting a home for himself and his young wife. But John is mentioned first; so he must have been the older. Again, the fact that they did not acquire more land for many years later suggests that they were very young when they moved to New Kent; all of which bears out the conclusions we have already reached as to their ages.

It will be noted from the first entry that John Sims was one of the two official processioners in 1708, and that Thomas Rice was the other. We shall see in the next Chapter that John Sims married Mary, the

daughter of Thomas Rice. So John and Mary had probably married before March, 1708, or about the same time that Matthew had married Hannah Mitchell, as shown by St. Peter's Vestry Register.

The photostat copies of St. Paul's Vestry Book applicable to the early processioning of Sims lands run from 1708 to 1743, and are as follows:

"13. The Lands of Paul Harroldson Jno. Perkins Jnr. Nich: Gentry John Tyler, John Tinsley, & Rees Hughes lying Adjacent to each other, being made one precinct. Paul Harroldson and John Perkins were appointed overseers, thereof, and made this return on the backside of the ordr. viz. This order fulfilled P, the Subscribers.

To which every of the said Parties Subscrib'd"

"14. The lands of David Crawford, Thomas Rice, John Sims, Matthew Sims and Thomas Crenshaw lying adjacent to each other being made one precinct of which the said Thomas Rice and John Sims were appointed overseers They made this return viz. the within precepts executed according to order.

To which every of the said parties Subscrib'd"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 148, March 14, 1708.)

"23. The lands of Wm. Harris, Adam Rotherford, Thos. Casey, Thos. Hurden, Widdow Watson, Geo. Alvis, Thos. Rice Jno Meeks and Martin Baker being made one precinct, whereof the said Wm Harris, & Adam Rotherford were appointed overseers made this return, viz. the above order comply'd with, according to Law, by the above mention'd persons Novr. 26, 1711. John Meeks, Thos. Rice, Martin Baker, Wm Harris, Jno. Casey, Mattw. Watson Adam Rotherford"

"24. The lands of Jno. Sims Jno. Shelton, Jo: Crenshaw, Wm Crenshaw, Edwd Sims, Matt. Sims, Geo. Brock -- Burrass, Geo. Wilkinson, David Crawford and Geo. Sims being made one precinct, whereof the said Jno. Sims, & Jno. Shelton were appointed Overseers made

this return, viz. To the Gentlemen of the Vestry of St. Pauls Psh. &c pursuant to an order dated 9br ye 17th we the Subscribers did on the 28th day of 9br last past, procession all the within lands, except the lands of Geo. Wilkinson which was never yet processioned, and the bounds thereof could not be found, In company with Jo Crenshaw Saml Pynings for Wm. Crenshaw, Mattw Sims, Geo. Brock, Wm Archer for Burrass, Geo Wilkinson aforesd Jno Exterkin for David Crawford & Geo Sims, Edwd Sims not there because ranging, we are with due respect &c Jno Sims Jno Shelton"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 162.)

"12. Order'd into one precinct for Processioning the lands of John Sym Edwd. Rice, Matthew, John, Edward & George Sims, Thos Prosser, Alexr McKenzy Kersey, Henry Tyler, Widd. Archer, Joseph Row, Mansfield Blackgrove, John Crenshaw George Butler, David Thompson, Mary Anderson, Matthew Sims & Edwd Rice, to see the said processioning perform'd &c. Who made the following return (viz.) the within order complay'd with Qui according to order

P, Matthew Sims
Edwd. Rice"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 195.)

"23. The lands of Wm Harris, Ad. Rotherford, Thos. Casey and Wm Staples, Timy Marfield Richd Watson, Geo Alves, Widd. Rice, Jno. Meeks and Martin Baker being made one precinct, of which Wm Harris and Adm Rotherford were overseers, made this return, viz. the within Order executed in presence of the persons within named Witness our hands this 31st day of March, 1716

Wm Harris, Adam Rotherford"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 179, Fo. 84.)

"The lands of John Shelton, John Sims, Jno Crenshaw, Wm Crenshaw, David Crawford, Edwd Sims, Matthew Sims, Geo. Brock, Burrass, Geo. Sims & Geo. Wilkinson, being made

one precinct, of which, John Shelton and John Sims were Overseers, made this return, viz. Janry. yee 9th & March ye: 17th, 1715, pursuant to the within Order we the Subscribers did on the day aforesaid, in company with the within nam'd persons, procession all the respective Lands, except the Land of Geo. Wilkerson whose bounds for want of a Survey, cant be found, which being very Troublesom to all parties concern'd, we humbly beg relief in the premises.

Jno. Shelton, Jno. Sims."

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 179, Fo. 84.)

"24. The lands of John Sim's John Shelton Jo. Crenshaw, Wm Crenshaw Edwd. Sims, Matt. Sims, Geo. Brock, Burras, Geo. Wilkinson, David Crawford, and Geo. Sims being made one precinct, whereof the said John Sims, and John Shelton were appointed Overseers made this return, viz. to the Gent: of the Vestry of St. Pauls Parish, &c, pursuant to an order dated 7 br ye 17th. 17 We the Subscribers, did, on the 28th day of 9br last past procession all the within lands except ye land of Geo. Wilkinson which was never yet processioned, and the bounds thereof could not be found. In Company with Jno Crenshaw Saml Pynings for Wm Crenshaw Matt Sims, Geo Brock, Wm Archer for Burras, Geo Wilkinson afosd John Eaderkin for David Crawford Geo Sims, Edwd Sims not there because ranging we are with due respect &c,

John Sims, John Shelton"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 170.)

"23. The lands of John Shelton, John Sims, Wm. Crenshaw, David Crawford Edwd. Sims, Matthew Sims, Matthew Sims, Geo. Brock, Burras, Geo. Wilkinson and Geo. Sims being one precinct of which John Shelton and John Sims were Overseers, who made this return, pursuant to the within Order we the Subscribers did procession all the within mentioned Lands, *neme contradicento*, and all present
X 1719 John Shelton, John Sym's"

(St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 185.)

"12. Ordered into one precinct for Processioning the lands of John Sym Edwd Rice, Matthew, John, Edward, & George Sims, Thos. Prosser, Alexr. McKenzy Kersey, Henry Tyler, Widd. Archer, Joseph Row, Mansfield Blackgrove, John Crenshaw, George Butler, David Thompson, Mary Anderson, Matthew Sims & Edwd Rice, to see the said processioning perform'd - &c. Who made the following return (viz.) the within order comply'd with, Qui, according to order,

P, Matthew Sims
Edwd. Rice"

(This last date before this was 1-31-1732. The next was 3-28-1732. Hence the year 1732 is assumed. This is from Volume 1, Page 108.)

"No. 23. Ordered into one precinct for processioning the Lands of the Heirs of John Syme Gent Deceas'd, Edwd Rice, Matthew, John, Edward and George Sims, Thos. Prosser, Alexr. McKenzy Kersey, Henry Tyler, Widdow Atcher, Joseph Row, Mansfield Blagrove, John Crenshaw, Geo. Butler, David Thompson, Mary Anderson, and that Matthew Sims, and Edward Rice see the said processioning perform'd"

(Time marked on other page March 20 - 1739 - on the following 3-29-1740 which was just five days after the beginning of the New Year as that began on the 25th of March. This is from Volume 2, Page 117.)

"No. 23. Ordered into one precinct for processioning the Lands of the Heirs of John Syme, Gent, Deceas'd Edward Rice, Matthew, Geo. Edwd. & Geo. Sims - Thos Prosser, Alexr Kersey, Henry Tyler, Widd: Archer, Joseph Row Mansfield Blagrove, John Crenshaw, Geo. Butler, David Thompson Mary Anderson, and that John Sims & Edw Rice see the said processioning Perform'd who made the following report, In Obedience to the within Order, we the within Nam'd John Sims and Edwd Rice, have seen the said Lands procession'd, every Owner being Present, except Joseph Row

March 7th 1743

John Sim
Edw. Rice"

(Volume 2—Page 121.)

CHAPTER VII.

ADAM SYMES AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

Adam Symes, assumed from his name to have been the oldest son of George and Elizabeth Symes, remained in Southeastern Virginia. Mrs. Jane Morris, of Little Rock, Arkansas, one of his descendants, has written a very full and careful genealogy of his line, quoting all the conveyances in which he was a party,¹ and she concludes that he lived first in Prince George County, because his earliest deed, dated January 6, 1719, recites that he was of the Parish of Bristol in the County of Prince George. He conveyed described lands to John Ledbetter, which touched Warrick Swamp.

Mrs. Morris says that this conveyance may have embraced a part of the two hundred acres of land listed in the Quit Rent Rolls as belonging to George Symes in 1704, because Warrick Swamp was partly in Surry County and partly in Prince George County adjoining it.

Again on August 7, 1719, Adam Symes acquired 150 acres on Warrick Swamp in Prince George County from one Francis Coleman, Jr., by lease for one year, probably followed by a release, giving him the fee. And on August 5, 1720, he leased this land to John Ledbetter, doubtless followed by a release, granting the fee. But this latter instrument recites that Adam Symes was of Surry County.

Next Adam Symes appears in the records as of Brunswick County, which was created in 1720 out of parts of Prince George, Surry, and Isle of Wight Counties. A grant is of record in the Virginia State Land Office at Richmond (Land Book 13, p. 69) conveying to

¹Adam Symes and His Descendants, by Jane Morris, Philadelphia: Dorrance & Co., 1938, p. 403.

Adam Symes of Brunswick County a tract of two hundred and fifty acres lying on the south side of Meherrin River in that County, describing the land by measured lines to trees as monuments. This grant is signed by Robert Carter for the Colony, and is dated October 31, 1726.

Under the same date, and on the same page in Land Book 13, there is another grant by Robert Carter to George Symes of Brunswick of two hundred and seventy acres on the south side of Meherrin River, beginning at a tree on the north side of Rattle Snake Swamp; and it might be assumed that the two grantees lived adjoining at that time. But the identity of dates is misleading. Although the grants were both dated October 31, 1726, they may have been applied for much earlier and at different times, and were merely executed on the same date. We have seen that the grant of 3,000 acres in Hanover County to John, Matthew and George Sims was applied for in 1718, but was not executed until 1727.

However, on June 27, 1733, George Symes, "of the County of Hanover," for ten pounds, conveyed this 270 acres which had been granted to him on October 31, 1726, to "William Syms of the County of Brunswick." So we know that George had given up his residence in Brunswick and had settled permanently in Hanover by 1733.

It is assumed that this George Symes was the brother of Adam, John, Matthew and Edward, and was the George who was processioned with John, Matthew and Edward in St. Paul's Parish, beginning in 1711.² It is quite possible, however, that the George in St. Paul's Parish as early as 1711 was the father, and that George the son stayed with Adam in Brunswick until

²See Chapter VI, *Supra*.

the grant of the 3,000 acres in Hanover was authorized in 1723, when he arranged to give up his Brunswick residence and move to Hanover. Shortly thereafter he sold his 270 acres in Brunswick to William Syms, who was one of the sons of Adam.

Adam Symes, we have seen, was born about 1689.³ He married Mary Isham, of a prominent Charles City County family from the founding of government in the Colony.⁴ Her father is not identified; but it was probably the same as the name of one of her sons, though which one we cannot tell.

The record of Adam Symes' will is preserved, rather illegibly, in a volume of "Brunswick County Deeds, Wills, &c., 1732-1740" in the Virginia State Library in Richmond. The will was dated March 15, 1732, and was probated July 15, 1733, and mentions his wife, Mary, and eight sons and one daughter, Mary, named for her mother. The sons, as made out from the will and other data discovered by Mrs. Morris, were George, Adam Jr., John, William, James, David, Charles, and Isham. Mrs. Morris decides that George was the oldest, and was born by the year 1709, reckoning this from the dates of transactions made by his oldest sons; which is a safe guess.⁵

George Symes married Martha Walton, as is supposed to be of record in Brunswick County; but Mrs. Morris has not found it.⁶ He died in 1763, as is shown by the Brunswick records.⁷

As anyone interested in identifying the descendants of Adam Symes can easily do so from Mrs. Morris' book, there is no need of tracing that line further here.

³See p. 84 (supra).

⁴See Mrs. Morris' book, p. 18.

⁵See Mrs. Morris' book, p. 29.

⁶Idem, p. 120.

⁷Ibid.

So we shall merely note the descendants who are particularly noteworthy.

Adam's son William is the first to be noted. He was born about the year 1715, in Brunswick County, Virginia, and lived to the extreme age of about ninety-nine years, dying in March, 1814, in that part of Richmond County, Georgia, now constituting Columbia County. The County seat of Richmond County is Augusta, where William Sims was evidently a large landholder and merchant for the last twenty years of his life. His will is dated March 5, 1813, and was registered May 3, 1815, in Will Book H, pp. 335-336, at Appling in Columbia County, Georgia.

Mrs. Morris records a deed from William Sims and his wife Susanna to his brother John Sims dated September 27, 1741, conveying 275 acres on Rattlesnake Creek in Brunswick County, Virginia, and reciting that he was of that County at the time.⁸ But he had moved to North Carolina by 1744; for he petitioned the Colonial Council at Newbern for 300 acres on November 27th of that year.⁹ This grant was probably made to him in Johnson County; for on November 25, 1752, William and his wife Susanna executed a deed to 104 acres on Rattlesnake Creek in Brunswick County, Virginia, and recited in that deed that they were of Johnson County, North Carolina, at the time. William married, prior to 1741, in Hanover County, Virginia, Susanna, one of the younger daughters of Richard Bullock, of Hanover County, whose oldest daughter married John Sims, Jr., the oldest son of John Sims, the brother of Adam Sims, William's father, and there is evidence of an intimacy continuing between some of John Sims' descendants and William Sims even after his migration into Georgia.

⁸Idem, p. 40.

⁹Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. IV., p. 710.

William Sims was deputy surveyor in North Carolina in 1766,¹⁰ and seems to have been a surveyor after moving to Georgia, whither he seems to have moved about 1774. His first grant of land in Georgia is said to have been in Richmond County on Uchee Creek in that year.¹¹ He wrote a perfect script hand, as appears from his note or obligation, in the possession of the author, written in 1794, when he was nearly eighty years old.

"This shall oblige me the Subscriber my heirs Executors and Administrators to make over a good sufficient Right and Title of Two Hundred Acres of Land in the State of Georgia in Richmond County on or near Spirit Creek to Elisha Sims his heirs Executors Administrators or Assigns on or before the 25th day of December 1795, the same being a consideration for a small Smoothbore Gun he the said Elisha Sims his heirs Executors or Administrators paying (before the Right is made) to William Sims his heirs &c Eight Dollars

Witness my hand and Seal this 13th day of October 1794

William Sims

S E A L

Test

Len H. Bullock"

(Indorsement on back)

"I indos the within obbligation to William H. Sims

L. S. Sims

Test

(this L. S. may mean Seal of Sims)

Elisha Sims Senr."

"William Sims

Note"

¹⁰Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. VII., p. 258.

¹¹This grant has not been verified by the author.

(On a separate piece of paper which was folded and sealed with a wax seal is the following:)

“William Simses

Note for

200 A of land”

(On the back)

“William H. Sims

His Hand”

“This the 9 of Sept.”

(The sealed packet was addressed;)

“Mr. William Sims Senr.

Care of Mr. Tucker”

Elisha Sims, as we shall see, was the grandson of William's uncle, John Sims of Hanover County, Virginia. How the note happened to remain in the payee's hands is not explainable. It was found by the author among old family papers.

William Sims must have been also a successful merchant. The tax records of Richmond County, Georgia, for 1818 show that William Sims & Co. had, in that year, a stock of goods valued at \$45,000;¹² and while William was dead in 1818, leaving his oldest son Mann Sims who had a son William, all in Columbia County, the grandson could not have amassed such a fortune by 1818.

William Sims was also a soldier. He was Captain of Wake County, North Carolina, Militia on October 6, 1772,¹³ and again a year later.¹⁴

After moving to Georgia he took part in the Revolution. He served under Col. James McNeil, who gave a certificate April 7, 1784, upon which William Sims

¹²“Some Early Tax Digests of Georgia,” p. 143, in Birmingham Public Library.

¹³Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. 1, p. 344.

¹⁴Idem, p. 689.

asked for a land bounty in Washington County, Georgia, in 1784. His name is also found in the certified list of Georgia troops, although he must have been about sixty-five years old; and both he and his son, Mann Sims, were in the Revolutionary Army of Georgia at about the same time.¹⁵

William Sims' will appears in Mrs. Morris' book;¹⁶ and she gives the names of his children as Mann Sims (died in 1823, as shown by records, including his will, in Columbia County, Georgia), Ann Henley Sims, Agatha, Abner, Leonard Henley and Peggy Ann. They are all referred to in William's will, dated March 5, 1813.

George Sims, the grandson of Adam Sims of Brunswick, is the next descendant of Adam who should be especially noted. This George was the oldest son of the George who was the oldest son of Adam Symes and Mary Isham.

George the father was born about 1709, and died in Brunswick County in September, 1763. His will is in Will Book 4, p. 370, of Brunswick County, Virginia, Wills, and is printed in Mrs. Morris' book¹⁷ along with a copy of the inventory of his estate. He left fourteen slaves. His wife Martha Walton died in 1772. His children, according to Mrs. Morris were eleven in number, of whom the oldest was the George of whom we are about to learn.

This George Sims was born about 1728 in Brunswick County, was living in Granville County, North Carolina in 1764, and died in Caswell County, North Carolina in 1808. He seems to have been a school-teacher.

¹⁵This Revolutionary activity of Wm. Sims was reported to the author by Miss Jeanette Biggs, of Oxford, N. C., but neither she nor the author has verified it from the Military Records of Georgia.

¹⁶Adam Symes and His Descendants, pp. 39, 40.

¹⁷Idem, p. 110.

While residing in Granville County, on June 6, 1765, George Sims wrote a remarkable paper entitled "An Address to the People of Granville County," in which he protested against the tyranny of the royal officers of the courts in fixing outrageous costs for litigation, and for collecting them by execution or by labor at one shilling sixpence per day. The paper is reprinted in Mrs. Morris' "Adam Symes and His Descendants" on pages 186 to 198, inclusive, and may also be found in Volume 17 of the "North Carolina Booklet," p. 171, with an article on it by Dr. Archibald Henderson of the University of North Carolina, entitled, "The Origin of the Regulator Movement in North Carolina." Mrs. Morris says of George Sims' address;¹⁸

"The author begins his address with the assertion that the inhabitants of Granville County were chiefly strangers to him and that there were very few with whom he was personally acquainted. But he had been in the county long enough to find himself arrested for debt. On February 9, 1765, he was ordered by Samuel Benton to appear before the Court to be held at Granville the first Tuesday in May to answer the petition of Nathaniel Hart who asked judgment against him for forty-nine shillings and two pence. A small farmer's and a schoolmaster's salary is never very large, and it must have been difficult for him to settle the obligation without having to pay unlawful extortions by way of fees to the clerk and the sheriff. It is plain that his recent ill-treatment at the hands of Samuel Benton, Clerk of the Court, had brought too forcibly home to him that deplorable situation of his countrymen, and he could not remain silent, even in the face of grave danger to himself and his family. On June sixth, one month after his arrest, he appealed to the people of Granville to resist the tyrannies and exactions of Benton. On August 7, 1765, he was arrested for a malicious and libelous

¹⁸p. 185.

'Writing against Samuel Benton, Esq., contrary to law and the peace of our Lord the Now King.' "

Mrs. Morris summarizes "The Regulation" in North Carolina as "a movement which began in 1766 as a protest against English tyranny and ended May 16, 1771, in the Battle of Alamance. In this battle the first blood was spilled in the United States in resistance to exactions of English rulers and oppressions by the English Government."¹⁹ And Dr. Archibald Henderson says that George Sims' paper, "as the first effective summing up of the grievances of the people, was surely a proximate cause of the Regulation."²⁰

The last descendant of Adam Symes whom we should especially note is Mrs. Jane Morris, herself, the author of the volume, "Adam Symes and His Descendants" so frequently quoted from in this essay.

Jane Sims Davidson Morris, wife of Emmet Morris, Esquire, of Little Rock, Arkansas, is a descendant of George Sims the oldest son of Adam, the source of her studies.

Mrs. Morris' line of descent is as follows, the proofs being set out in the proper places in her book:

George Sims, of Brunswick County, Virginia, planter and surveyor, oldest son of Adam Symes, was born about 1709, m. Martha Walton about 1728,²¹ and d. September 1763, in Brunswick County.

Their seventh son, Zachariah Sims, was born in Brunswick County, Virginia, in 1739, m. Mary Briggs, d. of Capt. Howell Briggs, and d. in North Carolina after 1790.²²

¹⁹Idem, p. 183.

²⁰Quoted by Mrs. Morris, p. 186.

²¹p. 120.

²²Id. p. 217.

Their oldest son Briggs Sims was born about 1770 in Brunswick County, Virginia, m. in Warren County, North Carolina, Fanny Duke, d. of Burwell Duke, and d. 1831-2, in Bedford County, Tennessee.²³

Their twelfth child, Frances Sims,²⁴ was born in Bedford County, Tennessee, and d. in Little Rock, Arkansas, August 27, 1875; m. first in Shelbyville, Tennessee, James Dryden, and moved to Greene County, Missouri, where she m. second, April 30, 1837, Andrew Batey Guynn.

Their second child, Mary Adeline Gwynne, was born July 7, 1842, in Green County, Missouri, m. September 18, 1866, Wm. P. Davison.²⁵

Their fifth child was Jane Sims Davison, Mrs. Morris, the author of "Adam Symes and His Descendants," published at Philadelphia by Dorrance & Company, in 1938.

Mrs. Morris' other works are, "The Duke-Symes Family," being a study of the genealogy of the Duke family of Virginia, and its tie with the Sims family, Philadelphia, Dorrance & Company, 1940, a volume of poems reprinted mostly from metropolitan newspapers, and various short stories.

Mrs. Morris resides in Little Rock, Arkansas.

²³Ibid.

²⁴Id. pp. 237, 308.

²⁵Id. p. 337.

CHAPTER VIII.

JOHN SIMS AND HIS CHILDREN.

John Sims is believed to have been the second son of George Symes of Surry and Isle of Wight, and Elizabeth his wife. While the St. Paul's Parish Records quoted in Chapter VI, *supra*, sometimes mention John Sims before Matthew, and sometimes mention Matthew before John in the minutes of the processionings; if the earlier mention of John Sims on the 1704 Quit Rent Rolls as the holder of one thousand acres in New Kent County, means that their father George Symes had taken the thousand acres in the name of John for the benefit of them all except his first son Adam, it would seem that John was the next oldest son.

Moreover when John, Matthew, and George carried out the purchase of the three thousand acres, approved in 1723 and granted in 1727, the fact that John was named first in the grant is further confirmation that he was the oldest of the three at the time.¹

Assuming, as we have done, that John was born in 1690,² John was about fourteen years old in 1704, and was only seventeen or eighteen years old on March 14, 1708, when he was appointed an overseer with Thomas Rice of the processioning of the lands of David Crawford, Thomas Rice, John Sims, Matthew Sims and Thomas Crenshaw, which lay adjacent to each other.³

Evidently John and Matthew were occupying the thousand acres for the Sims family at that time, and Thomas Rice selected John Sims to help him oversee the processioning for the little neighborhood. 1708 was

¹See p. 80, *supra*.

²See p. 84, *supra*.

³See p. 86, *supra*.

the first year that processioning of lands was ordered by Statute, with a formal report to the Vestry of the Parish.⁴

John Sims married Mary Rice, the daughter of Thomas Rice, as is stated in a memoir written by her nephew, the Reverend David Rice, later an evangelist in Kentucky. The memoir is a part of "An Outline of the History of The Church in the State of Kentucky, Containing Memoirs of the Rev. David Rice, Collected and Arranged by Robert H. Bishop, Professor of History in Transylvania University."⁵ Chapter IV (p. 32), entitled "Introduction of the Gospel Into Virginia" begins, "My aunt, Mary Rice, was married to a *John Symms*," and continues with the following interesting account of John Sims' adoption of a Christian life:

"My aunt, Mary Rice, was married to a John Symms. John Symms in some part of his life, by what means I know not, probably by little more than by reading the scriptures, got deeply impressed with the necessity and importance of a better religion than that which he possessed. Under a deep conviction of his being a guilty depraved sinner he continued for ten or twelve years earnestly seeking the bread of life, while he found none to break it to him. At length, by the same means of reading the Bible, he found that God had made provision for such sinners, and that it was revealed to them in the Gospel. He believed in Christ as a Savior, and embraced the plan of salvation, and the deep gloom of a long night of darkness was dispelled by the beams of the sun of righteousness. From that time to the close of his life he appeared to be a tender, sober, and exemplary Christian."

He adds that he had an uncle named James Rice, who also became an ardent Christian.

⁴Hening's Statutes, Vol. 3, p. 325. Act of 1705, 4 Anne.

⁵Lexington, Printed and published by Thomas T. Skillman, 1824. The volume is in the New York Library, numbered "ZWOW."

The memoir contains the following with reference to Mary's father, Thomas Rice, and gives also an interesting picture of the state of the Church of England in that part of America in the early Eighteenth Century:

"The Rev. David Rice was born in Hanover County, Virginia, on the 29th. day of December, 1733.

"His grandfather, Thomas Rice was an Englishman by birth, of Welsh extraction. He was an early adventurer into Virginia. Where he spent the early part of his life is not certainly known. In the latter part of his life he owned a small plantation in the lower part of what is now Hanover County. Here he left his wife with nine sons and three daughters, and went to England to receive a considerable estate which had been left him, but returned no more. The sailors reported that he died at sea. It was supposed that he was assassinated. No return was ever made of the property after which he had gone, and his family were left destitute in a strange land (Page 13).

"The family being left without an earthly father, were distressed, but they were in good providence of God provided for. The greater part moved about thirty miles farther up the country, where they procured small plantations, on which they raised numerous families. Four or five of them became serious professors of religion, and were succeeded in their religious professions by a considerable number of their children.

"His father, David Rice, was a plain farmer, who having food and raiment by his daily labor, was there-with content. The spirit of speculation had not in those days possessed the American people. He never had any slaves, as he considered them more plague than profit. His wife was averse to it from principle, as being a trafic in human flesh, and an unjust infringement on the right of our fellow creatures. They were both members of the established church, and taught their children the Lord's prayer, the Creed, and the Ten Commandments (Page 14).

"Religious instructions were not wholly neglected in the neighborhood where Mr. Rice was raised. Yet there was little or nothing of the power of religion either seen or felt. Parents required their children on Sabbath morning to clean themselves, read a chapter or two in the holy scriptures, and after this, instead of spending the day as the Sabbath of the Lord, they met promiscuously and spent the remainder of the day in idle amusement, such as fishing, hunting, etc.—(Page 15).

"Sometimes attending upon the public and private means of grace with a great deal of fervor, and at other times with a great deal of languor, and with something like indifference, he went to hear the Rev. Samuel Davies, whose ministry he had frequently attended, without having received anything from it of special benefit (page 20)."

Record transactions of Thomas Rice are limited, because of the destruction of nearly all the Hanover County Records in the burning of the court house by the federal army. But Hanover Record Deed Book A, page 214 (See also Valentine Papers, p. 1684), shows that Richard Bullock was grantee from William Rice of Louisa and Thomas Rice of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover, as executors of the will of Thomas Rice, dated 4/7, 1744, probated 1/28, 1745. And the Reprint of Virginia County Records, Vol. 6, gives an abstract of the will of William Rice, dated 26 Feb., 1733, leaving his property to four sons, David, William, Shadrach, and Micajah. The will was offered for probate in court Dec. 6, 1734, by Robert Clark, who had "lately" married the widow Elizabeth. Also the Valentine Papers, p. 3589, show that Thomas Rice lived in St. Martin's Parish, Hanover County, on December 4, 1734.

Comparing these fragments with the data on Thomas Rice given by Rev. David Rice, above, it would seem that the original Thomas Rice, mentioned in the memoir as the grandfather of Rev. David Rice, was the

father of the Thomas Rice of St. Martin's Parish, Louisa, whose will was probated in 1745, and also of the William Rice whose will was probated by Robert Clark in 1734, as well as of Rev. David Rice's father David (Referred to in the memoir above) and Mary Rice who married John Sims.

These records also show that David and Micajah were Rice family names.

The Thomas Rice who was proccessioner with John Sims of certain St. Paul's Parish lands on March 14, 1708 (*Supra*, p. 86), was evidently the original Thomas Rice, and the "Widd Rice" whose land was proccessioned March 31, 1716 (*Supra*, p. 87), was his widow, Thomas Rice, Senior, having died between 1708 and 1716.

John Sims and Mary Rice must have been married about 1708 or 1709; and they evidently lived upon his share of the 1,000 acres, purchased doubtless by his father prior to 1704. Nor did he acquire more land until 1719, when he obtained another grant of two hundred acres on the branches of Stone "Horse" Creek, as stated in the record in Book 10, p. 439, of the Virginia Land Grants in the State Land Office at Richmond. This grant, dated July 19, 1719, described the two hundred acres by degrees and pole measurement, with marked trees as the monuments. Stone "Horse" Creek may be identified on the larger maps of the region of Hanover County (cut from New Kent in 1720) near the line where Louisa County was cut from Hanover in 1742. Rumor has it that there was an early stone house in the region, and that the name of the Creek was originally Stone House Creek.

John Sims again in 1725 acquired four hundred acres of new land, "beginning at a red oak on the south side of the South Anna River at the mouth of Horse Shoe Neck," measured by poles to trees as monuments.⁶

⁶This Grant is dated Aug. 17, 1725, and is in Book 12, p. 231, in the State Land Office in Richmond.

On the margin of the record is "Captain John Syms"; but this is probably a later notation by a confused clerk as "Col." John Syme became a large grantee of land as surveyor of the County of Louisa when that County was cut off of Hanover a few years later; and "Col." John Syme had a son called Captain John Syme. But Captain John Syme was not born until about 1729, his father having married one Sarah Winston shortly theretofore, as may be verified from any Virginia record of the Winston family. So undoubtedly the 400 acres were granted to John Symes. The grant is dated Aug. 17, 1725.

Then came the grant of 3,000 acres to John, Matthew and George Sims in 1727.

As we shall see later, George Sims obtained two grants, one of 200 acres and another of 400 acres in the same neighborhood, both dated Aug. 17, 1725. Matthew Sims obtained two grants of 350 acres and 400 acres in the same neighborhood, both dated March 24, 1725;⁷ and Edward Sims obtained 400 acres in the same neighborhood, dated Sept. 28, 1728. So it appears that the Sims family owned together 6,150 acres, probably all in a body; and there is no evidence that they disposed of any of it until some years later.⁸

This land was all in Hanover County at the time; but after 1742, part of it, certainly the four hundred acres granted to Edward, was in Louisa, as were an additional six hundred and thirty-two acres granted to John Sims' son John on Feb. 10, 1748.⁹ So it is assumed that all the family lands as well as their residences were near the line made in 1742 between Hanover and Louisa Counties, some on one side, and some on the other.

⁷Land Book 12, pp. 352 and 353.

⁸These grants are all listed in Appendix IV, post.

⁹Listed in Appendix IV.

They were embraced also in two parishes, St. Paul's and St. Martin's. The parish lines are not clearly located. But from recitals in the grants, compared with recitals in the few deeds remaining after the devastation of the Federal Army during the War Between the States, Hanover County embraced parts of both parishes, while Louisa embraced a part of St. Martin's only.

Coming to the children of John Sims and Mary Rice, they probably had seven sons; and if they had any daughters, they have not been identified. They all lived in Hanover County, and doubtless left wills there; but, if so, they were burned with the records of them.

Their identifiable sons are John, Thomas, Micajah, David and Sherwood, and probably Edward and James.

As to John, we have sufficient proof. In addition to the minutes of St. Paul's Parish Vestry given in Chapter VI, *supra*, the last of which showed that John Sims acted as overseer of the processioning as late as March 7, 1743, we have a minute dated 12 September, 1743, appointing John Sims, Senior, in the place of Matthew Sims, for the ensuing processioning; and the minute dated February 4th, 1747, appointing John Sims, "blacksmith" instead of Edward Rice. The two minutes are as follows:

"At a Vestry held for St. Paul's Parish ye 12th of 9ber 1743

Mr. Barttelet Anderson)	Prest. the Revd. Mr. Patrick Henry Ministr.
Capt. John Bickerton)	Majr. John Henry
Mr. Thos. Booth)	Capt. Peter Garland
	Capt. Thos. Anderson
	Mr. Joseph Baughon

Mr. Robt. Jennings was at a former Vestry Elected a Vestryman for this parish and this day took the Oathe Enjoynd by Law, Subscribd the Test Pres, Mr. Robt Jennings, and Capt. William Winston

Ordered that the Procession be continued as formerly Except and that the Clerk make out orders accordingly to wit Thos. Tinsley Junr. in ye room of John Jones and Benj. Bowles to be added to Richd. Winn in the room of his James Anderson in the room in the room of Thos. Anderson with Drury Allen to be added with John Williamson in the room of Thos. Johnson in No. 10 Matthew Pate & Thos. Baker in ye room of Geo; Vaughn & in No. 12, Capt. Garland with Capt. Bickerton in the room of John Joiner— in No. 13, Matthew Jennings in the room of William Jennings— in No. 14, William in the room of Abraham Lewis— in No. 15, Abraham Lewis in the room of Josph. Peace, added to Geo: in No. 17, John Howard in the room of Jeremiah Linsey added to in No. 19, Robt. Via, in the room of John Elliott with John Street in No. 22, John Blackwell Junr, and George Jones in ye room of Rich. in No. 23, John Sims Senr, in the room of Matthew Sims with Edward & Jno. Holden in No. 24, John Burnley in the room of Eliezor added to Barttelet Anderson”

“At a Vestry held for St. Pauls Parish Febry 4th. 1747

Prest, Barttelot Anderson)	
John Snelson)	Wm. Winston
John Bickerton)	John Dixon
Thos. Booth)	Thomas Anderson
Robt. Jennings)	Gent.

Ordered that the Lands in this parish be procession'd in the same precincts as appointed the last processioning; and the same Processioners; only John Dabney is Appointed instead of Cornelius Dabney, John Pryor instead of Christopher Cawthon, John Winston instead of David Gwin, James Brewer instead of Michael Holland, John Garland instead of Capt. Peter Garland, Joel Ferrele instead of Matthew Jennings,

Wm. Winston Carpentr, instead of Abraham Lewis
Elisha Merideth instead of John Melton, Saml. Wooddy
instead of Jno. Wooddy, John Sims black Smith in-
stead of Edward Rice William Clarke & Wm. Hundly
instead of Barttelet Anderson & John Burnley"

Then on Sept. 30, 1751, is a Vestry minute showing
that John Sims and Edward Sims were appointed and
acted as processioners; and this minute is as follows:

"No. 22 At a Vestry held for St. Pauls Parish Septr.
30th. 1751

Order'd into one precinct for proccessioning the
lands of John Sims, Edwd. Sims, John Syme, Supry
Hardin, the Sim's Widd. Proser, Alexdr. Kersey,-----
-----Tyler, John Archer, Thos. Green, Widd: Blagrove,
Joseph Crenshaw, James Gentry, David Thompson,
Nelson Anderson, the Tylers, & that John Sims &
Edwd. Sims see the said Proccessioning perform'd
before the last of March, and take and make a Return
to the Vestry on account of every persons land they
shall proccession, and of the persons present at the
same & what Land in their precinct they shall fail
to proccession, with the particular reason of such Fail-
ure, and that the several Occupiers of the abovesd
Lands do attend the said proccessions accordingly

Copia Test Ralph Hunt Clk Vestry

In Obedience to the within Order we have proces-
sion'd ye lands appointed in the order Peaceably and
quietly except Nelson Anderson's and David Thom-
son's which was appointed in another Order

John Sims

Edwd. Sims"

Evidently John Sims, Sr. was dead in 1751. The
only question is whether the John Sims, called "John
Sims Blacksmith," was the son of John Sims, Sr. We
shall see that Edward Sims had a son John, whose wife
was named Rebecca, and that that John lived in St.
Martin's Parish, Hanover County, on March 6, 1751,
when he made a deed so reciting, conveying land granted

to Edward; so that Edward's son John could not have been the John of St. Paul's Parish. We shall also see that the John Sims who received a grant of 632 acres in Louisa, Feb. 10, 1748, referred to above, conveyed the same 632 acres on Aug. 27, 1754, to one William Dickeson, reciting that he lived in St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, and his wife was named Sarah. Moreover, there is nothing to show that either Matthew Sims¹⁰ or George Sims had a son named John; nor is there any other John Sims to account for. So by exclusion we know that John Sims, blacksmith, was John Sims Jr., and that his wife was named Sarah.

John Sims, Jr., acquired an eight hundred acre farm from one Samuel Henderson in Granville County, North Carolina, by deed dated June 2, 1752,¹¹ and moved there with his family about that time; and there he died sometime in 1766, leaving a will dated Feb. 10, 1765, in which he bequeathed his "smith tools" to his son, Elisha, thereby corroborating the conclusion that he was the "John Sims, blacksmith" of Hanover County, Virginia.

John Sims, Jr., could not have been born before 1712 or 1713, because, as we shall see, he died in 1766 leaving his wife Sarah with child; and as she could not have been much over forty-five years old at that time, she must have been born about 1720. She was the oldest daughter of Richard Bullock, who moved from Hanover County, Virginia, to Granville County, North Carolina, about the time John Sims moved thither, 1752 or slightly later; and Mrs. Zebulon Judd, a descendant, places her birth date as about 1719. So John Sims, Jr., must not have been born earlier than 1712, as there is no evidence

¹⁰See Matthew Sims' family chart in Virginia State Library, Richmond. A copy is in the papers of the author of this essay.

¹¹The deed recites that John Sims was of Hanover Co., Va. It is in Book L, p., of the Granville County records. The author has a certified copy.

that he was married before he married Sarah Bullock.

It is quite probable that his parents, John Sims, Sr., and Mary Rice, had one or two daughters born to them before their first son John, Junior.

The second son of John Sims and Mary Rice was probably Thomas.

The will of Leonard Sims, a grandson of John Sims and Mary Rice, and who died in Warren County, North Carolina, in 1804, gives a description of certain lands devised as adjoining the land of Thomas Sims' widow. This Thomas must have been one of the earlier sons of John Sims and Mary Rice; for after naming her oldest son John, for his father, his mother would likely have named her second son, Thomas, after her father, Thomas Rice.

Thomas evidently moved to North Carolina when comparatively young; for Mrs. N. F. Porter writes to the author of this essay, under date of October 4, 1932, that, "In 1744 Thomas Sims, born in Hanover County, moved to Granville County, North Carolina, and served in the North Carolina Militia in 1780." So he must have been born about 1715, and have been around sixty-five years old when he entered the service.

The third son of John Sims and Mary Rice was probably Micajah, a name undoubtedly derived from the Rice family. Micajah's birth cannot be fixed; but it must have been about 1720. He died in 1791; for in Book 3 of Louisa County Records, page 353, we find that a John Sims was appointed administrator of the estate of Micajah Sims, deceased, and that Micajah, Jr., and Benjamin were his bondsmen, January 1, 1791,¹² And that entry, together with a deed in Louisa Book I, p. 566, dated December 25, 1798, by which Massie,¹³ Micajah,

¹²Compare Will Book 1, p. 18, Louisa County.

¹³L. M. Sims, of Louisa, Virginia, says Massie was a daughter of Micajah. See his letter to the author, dated 11, 30, 1935.

Benjamin, and Elizabeth Sims of Louisa County conveyed to David Sims, their full share in the land of Micajah Sims, deceased—show that Micajah lived most of his life in Louisa County and died there.

Family records in the possession of Lucien Mortimer Sims, Esq., of Louisa, Virginia, begin with Micajah Sims, and will be set out in a later chapter on his descendants. They do not prove that he was the son of John Sims and Mary Rice; but as the name Micajah was a Rice name, and a quite unusual name, that he was a son of John Sims and Mary Rice is quite certain. Moreover, the tradition in that branch of the Sims family has always been that Micajah, David and Sherwood were brothers, according to Mr. L. M. Sims,¹⁴ and David is a Rice name also. There is no evidence of the name of Micajah Sims' wife.

David Sims and Sherwood Sims must also have been sons of John Sims and Mary Rice, if the tradition in the Louisa County branch of the family is reliable. The deed above quoted added to the fact that David is a Rice name, as we have seen from the "Memoir of the Rev. David Rice," makes David's identity clear enough. But Sherwood's claim rests mainly upon the family tradition that he was a brother of the others. This Sherwood was probably the youngest son; as the biography of his descendant the famous Dr. James Marion Sims says that his ancestor was born in 1730 and died in 1825; and it is unlikely that Mary Sims would have had children much later than 1730, when she must have been over forty years old.

Edward and James may well have been two other sons of John Sims and Mary Rice, but there is no way to fix their birth dates with reference to the others.

As to Edward, we have seen that on September 30, 1751, John Sims and Edward Sims were appointed pro-

¹⁴See his letter to the author dated January 9, 1936.

cessioners in St. Paul's Parish, and that they later reported having carried out the order, though their report is not dated. This John was of course John, Junior; and as Edward is named second, this Edward could not have been Edward, Sr., although he may have been Edward, the son of Edward, as we may conclude when we come to discuss the sons of Edward Sims, Sr. But if the Edward of St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, was the son of Edward Sims, Sr., then who was the Edward Sims of St. Martin's Parish, Louisa County, who on February 12, 1765 (fourteen years later, it is true), conveyed his land, evidently his home, one hundred and thirty-nine acres in Louisa, to one George Kersey, and removed to Warren County, North Carolina? The deed from Edward Sims to Kersey is in Deed Book C1/2, p. 60, of Louisa County Records, and the deed to the four hundred acres of land which, as Edward Sims of Louisa County, Virginia, he accepted in Warren County (then Bute County), North Carolina, on January 29, 1765, is in Book A, p. 133, of the Warren County Records in Warrenton, North Carolina. He evidently sold his Louisa home after buying a Warren County home. This Edward died in Warren County, North Carolina, in 1792, leaving a will dated 1789, which was probated there; and is of record in Will Book 6, p. 72, of Warren County; and while he left no sons, he left four daughters.¹⁵ So this Edward who moved to North Carolina may have been the son of John Sims and Mary Rice, rather than the Edward of St. Paul's Parish, Hanover County.

As to there having been a seventh son of John Sims and Mary Rice named James, the reasons for thinking so are, (1) that there are too many Jameses appearing in the Louisa and Hanover Records to account for them

¹⁵See Quit claim deed from "Legatees of Edward Sims to John Mayfield" Book 13, p. 281, Warren County, November 15, 1794.

all otherwise, (2) that Mary Rice had a brother named James, as we have seen from the "Memoir of the Rev. David Rice," and (3) that there is an oral tradition in the family of Dr. James Marion Sims, of there having been originally seven brothers. It is not important, however, to consider the question further.

Too much information has been collected by the author on the various descendants of John Sims and Mary Rice to admit of its inclusion in this one chapter. The information collected on Matthew Sims and his descendants, that on George Sims and his descendants, and that on Edward Sims and his descendants make one chapter each, as did that on Adam Sims and his descendants. Therefore to accomplish symmetry of the essay, let us discuss now successively, Matthew, George, Edward and James Sims and their respective descendants, and then return to the descendants beyond the first generation from John Sims and Mary Rice.

The descendants of the other supposed child of George Sims and Elizabeth, namely, Sarah, the wife of Alexander Snead, will not be discussed further, as nothing has been learned about them.

CHAPTER IX.

MATTHEW SIMS AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

Matthew Sims, assumed to have been the third son of George Sims of Isle of Wight and Surry Counties, was born in 1690 or 1691, according to whether he was a twin of John of New Kent, or was born a year later. He was dead in 1748, for the grant of six hundred and thirty-two acres obtained by John Sims, Jr., in Louisa County, dated February 10, 1748, describes the land granted as, "Beginning at Matthew Sims (deceased) his corner pine."¹

Matthew Sims appears in the land records as occupying lands in St. Paul's Parish, Hanover County, on March 14, 1708, when his lands were processioned by Thomas Rice and John Sims.² He was no doubt occupying, with his brother John, the thousand acres acquired by their father in 1704, in John Sims' name. But he seems not to have been content with his share of the thousand acres; for under date of March 24, 1725, he acquired by grant from the Crown seven hundred and fifty acres in Hanover County by two grants of that date.³ And he had already joined his brothers John and George in 1723 in taking over the three thousand acres evidently selected by them under the authority granted to their father by the Executive Council of the Colony in 1718, that grant being issued on June 16, 1727.⁴ Thus Matthew held two thousand acres altogether, assuming that he was allotted one-fourth of the

¹The grant was to "John Sims"; but that it was to John, Jr., see Chapter XIII, post.

²Supra, p. 86.

³Land Book 12, pp. 352 and 353, in the Land Office in Richmond.

⁴See p. 80, supra.

original one thousand received through John from his father in 1704.

Certainly much of this land, especially the seven hundred and fifty acres, lay over the line of Louisa County, which was cut off from Hanover in 1742. The records of Louisa County since 1742 are preserved; but as most of the boundaries of the grants are pole measures to trees and corners as markers, it is impossible to locate the lands or to trace them when broken up among Matthew's descendants and their vendees. Matthew Sims himself seems to have conveyed none of his Louisa land; and if he conveyed any Hanover land the records are among those destroyed.

Matthew Sims married Hannah Mitchell in New Kent County on "March ye 3rd., 1708-9," as appears from an entry in St. Peter's Parish Register (reprint) p. 416.

Prior to an Act of Parliament passed in 1750, the legal year began in England on the 25th of March, instead of the 1st of January. So the 3rd of March, 1708-9, really was after January 1, 1709, as we would now call it.⁵ But under the list of "births," St. Peter's Register (reprint) p. 401 contains the entry, "Anne, Daughter of Mattw. & Hannah Sims. Bapt. Jan. ye: 29th, 1709." And if Matthew and Hannah had not been married at the time she would certainly not have been called Hannah Sims. Such was the frankness of the day. So the child must have been born January 29, 1710, or the marriage have been in March, 1708. But as Matthew, even if a twin of John, could not have been born before 1690, the probability is that he married Hannah Mitchell March 3, 1709, as the year is counted now, and that the child Anne was born January 29, 1710, the birth entry being made according to the legal year of 1709, which did not end until March 25, 1710.

⁵See Encyc. Britt., 11th Ed., p. 100, Title, "Calendar."

St. Peter's Parish Register contains many entries of the name Mitchell before 1708-9. So the Mitchell family must have been quite large in New Kent County at that day. But there is no entry of the birth of Hannah Mitchell; and so we do not know her father's name.

Nor do we know how many children were born to Matthew Sims and his wife. There is a Sims family chart, prepared in pen and ink by Laurens G. Young, of Union, South Carolina, about 1917, of which a copy is in the Virginia State Library at Richmond, and of which the author of this essay has a photostatic copy. It is also made the basis of statements as to Matthew Sims' descendants by a descendant, Dr. Wilson Gee, in his essay on the Gist Family,⁶ p. 48, note. But the chart is designed primarily to give the issue of Matthew Sims, Junior, a son of Matthew Sims; and in addition to Anne, the first child of Matthew and Hannah Sims, gives only two other children, namely, David and Matthew, Junior.

There seems to be nothing in the Louisa County records to sustain the chart in proving that Matthew Sims, Sr., had a son named David except a deed in Will Book E, p. 203, the abstract of which is as follows:

"Matthew Sims of St. Martin's Parish in Hanover Co. to David Sims, Jr. for love and affection for his son David 115 acres on the South fork of Pamunky River, adjoining the late Col. Richard Johnson, dec'd. and Dudley Diggs bounded on the North by a branch whereon Reuben Sims' spring called Spring Branch lately bought of Richard Dabney, and acknowledged 10/12, 1778."

Of course the grantor was Matthew Sims, Jr., and the implication is that David, Jr., was so-called because he had an uncle named David Sims. But as the con-

⁶"The Gist Family of South Carolina and its Maryland Antecedents," by Wilson Gee, Charlottesville: Jarman's, 1934.

veyance recites that David was the son of Matthew, the addition of junior to his name merely shows that there was an older David Sims. In fact there was an older David Sims, the son of John Sims and Mary Rice, as we have seen, who was named for David Rice. That David was grantee in the deed from Massie, Micajah, Benjamin, and Elizabeth Sims, in Book I, p. 566, of Louisa Records, December 25, 1798, and was grantee in a deed in Book J, p. 599, to 12 1/2 acres from John and Elizabeth Sims dated 10/10, 1803. He was probably the David who with his wife Mary sold 73 acres, a part of the original Sims tract, "being on the South fork of Locust Creek," and to the mouth of "Quiet Branch" on 8/29, 1789, Louisa Book J. p. 472.

Two possibly younger David Simses are clearly identifiable in Louisa records after 1800. The estate of one of them was appraised on his decease, 5/3/, 1811, as shown in Book 5. This may have been the David son of John and Mary. But the other David, whose wife's name was Rachel, sold out 100 acres to Benjamin Sims, on 4/9, 1812, Matthew Sims witnessing the deed, and evidently moved to South Carolina; for in Book M, p. 308, Lewis Sims, Margaret Sims, Martha Langford and Wm. Grady on 10/14, 1813, sell to David Sims in Abbeville District, South Carolina, 50 acres in Louisa County, Virginia. This David must have been the David Junior, who was the son of Matthew, Junior; although the Sims Chart above referred to shows that the wife of David, Junior, was named Elizabeth. Evidently it was this same David who with Lewis Sims and Leonard Sims had the 50 acres in Louisa County, on 4/13, 1795. Deed Book I, p. 29; although the chart does not show that Matthew, Junior, had sons Lewis and Leonard.

At all events we must give up tracing out any of the David Sims lines, and go to the definitely ascertained descendants of Matthew Sims, Junior, as far as we have space to trace them.

Matthew Sims, Junior, according to the above referred to chart, married Jemima Glenn on November 9, 1736, and certainly remained in Louisa County later than 1777; for on June 3, 1777, he acquired from Richard Dabney and his wife, of King William County, 388 acres in Louisa. See Deed Book E, p. 171. But a statement made by Miss Sarah Adeline Sims of Grindal Shoals, South Carolina, in 1894, and published by a descendant of Matthew Sims, Jr., Dr. Wilson Gee, in his monograph entitled, "The Gee Family of Union County, South Carolina," p. 17, says that Matthew Sims [Junior] went to South Carolina after the close of the Revolutionary War.

The Sims Chart shows that he had seven sons, Charles, the oldest, having been born November 8, 1737, Matthew, born February 12, 1739, James, born April 24, 1742, Nathan, born May 15, 1745, Reuben, born September 27, 1750, David, born August 24, 1757, who died young, and another David, born August 9, 1760, and also five daughters, Mercy, born June 17, 1735 [the Chart says 1785], who married a Sanders, Nancy, born June 9, 1736 [the Chart says 1786], who married Dr. Jacob Gilliam, Hannah, born February 12, 1748, who married David Henderson, Drucilla, born February 8, 1753, who married a Brazelman, and another daughter born in 1759, who died after a few days.

As Matthew Sims, Sr., was married in March 1708/9, at about eighteen years of age, and his first child, Anne, was born in January, 1710, Matthew, Jr. must have been born about 1712, and married about 1734. So the youths of the second generation were beginning to marry later than their parents married.

On account of its length it is impracticable to reproduce the chart of Matthew Sims' descendants in

⁷Charlottesville: Jarman's, 1935.

this essay. Any descendant of a son or daughter of Matthew Sims, Junior, ignorant of his or her line from the particular son or daughter, can send to the Virginia State Library and obtain a photostatic copy of the chart. So we shall note here only the two of Matthew Sims' sons which require special mention.

Charles Sims, the oldest son of Matthew Sims, Junior, married Sybella Bowles, daughter of John Knight Bowles of Hanover; and they had three daughters, Betsy, Nancy, and Mary, and one son William. Charles came to South Carolina as a pioneer before the Revolution; but when the War began, he returned to Virginia, and raised a company and was mustered into service at Albemarle Court House. He had his commission as captain from Patrick Henry, dated 1777. He seems to have been ordered at once back to the Carolinas for his military service, engaging in the Battle of the Cowpens, and other conflicts with the British in the Southern territory.⁸

This Captain Charles Sims was evidently not the Col. Charles Sims who served in the Virginia forces and who was one of the pall-bearers at General George Washington's funeral.⁹

Captain Charles Sims served through the Revolutionary War, was captured by the British and ordered to be hanged, but was rescued by an old schoolmate, a Captain George, serving with the British Army.

After the close of the War he built a home on Broad River, and amassed a large quantity of land. He was a staunch member of the Church of England to the end of his ninety years, and refused to recognize the Methodists who became established in the region,

⁸See the same note by Miss Sarah Adeline Sims, reprinted by Professor Wilson Gee.

⁹See Hayden's "Washington and his Masonic Compeers," pp. 197-200, describing Washington's Funeral.

and even converted his wife; but he had to go to Charleston to attend the services of his church.

Apparently Captain Charles Sims was made a lieutenant-colonel before his military services ended. In the volume "Historical Collections of Georgia," issued by Habersham Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, at p. 35, is given a story of his revolutionary services, stating that he came to Georgia from Albemarle County, Virginia, in 1777, and stating that he became a lieutenant-colonel.

James, the third son of Matthew Sims, Junior, married Elizabeth Saunders, prior to 1767, and evidently settled in Goochland County, which adjoined Hanover and Louisa, on the South. The "Douglas Register," a list of births, deaths, and marriages in that County, as preserved and reprinted, gives the marriage of James Sims and Elizabeth Saunders, on page 118, but does not give the date. It was probably in 1766, however; for on page 294 are the following entries of births of their children: 4/1, 1767, a daughter Ann; 12/29, 1768, a son Matthew; 10/18, 1770, a son James; 10/25, 1772, a son John.

Then "Ann Symes m. Will Gilliam, 4/14. 1782," when she was just fifteen years old, as appears from her birth.

The Matthew Sims Chart, above referred to, gives to James and Elizabeth two other daughters and three other sons, Reuben, Nathan, and Patrick Henry Sims; but omits a daughter Hannah, who married David Henderson, 11/8, 1785, as shown on p. 284 of the Douglas Register. The chart makes Hannah a sister of James, which could not have been possible.

James Sims and Elizabeth must have remained in Virginia until about 1786, for on 3/20, 1786, they conveyed to William Cheek of James City County, Virginia, 342 acres in Louisa and Hanover Counties adjoining

Powell Anderson, on Terrapin Road; and recited that they were of Union County, South Carolina.

Their sons, Reuben, Nathan, and Charles evidently moved to South Carolina, and their son Patrick Henry, who married Lucy Beaufort Oct. 12, 1799, must have married her in South Carolina. Certainly Patrick Henry Sims lived in Newberry District, South Carolina, and died there, leaving a will dated December 15, 1821;¹⁰ and Reuben and Nathan must have lived there also; for the letter of Miss Sarah Adeline Sims of Union County, South Carolina, copied by Dr. Wilson Gee in "The Gee Family of Union County, South Carolina"¹¹ refers to them as being there during her memory.

Nancy Sims, a daughter of Matthew Sims, Junior, and Jemima Glenn, married Dr. Jacob Gilliam, according to the Matthew Sims Chart, and evidently lived in Newberry District also.

From all three of these children of Matthew Sims, Junior, and Jemima Glenn, as the result of intermarriages between their descendants, Lt.-Col. Charles Sims, James Sims, and Nancy Sims Gilliam, is descended Dr. Wilson Gee, Professor of rural Economics and Rural Sociology at the University of Virginia. Dr. Gee was born in Union, South Carolina, September 18, 1888, married Mary Gaston, daughter of John W. Gaston, of Duncan, South Carolina, June 7, 1921, and has a daughter, Mary Wilson Gee, born 1922, and a son, Gaston Gee, born 1923. Dr. Gee's career and publications may be found in recent numbers of "Who's Who in America."¹² He has given the author of this essay his line of descent from both Patrick Henry Sims (d. 1821), and also from Nancy Sims, as follows:

¹⁰See "The Gist Family," by Dr. Wilson Gee, p. 48, Charlottesville: Jarman's, 1934.

¹¹Charlottesville: Jarman's, 1935, pp. 19-20.

¹²Chicago: The A. N. Marquis Company, published every two years.

1. Reuben Gilliam (1793-1858), the son of Dr. Jacob Gilliam and Nancy Sims, married Mary Coleman Sims, the daughter of Patrick Henry Sims and Lucy Beaufort.

2. Wilson Parham Gee married Drucilla (1822-1892), daughter of Reuben Gilliam and Mary Coleman Sims.

3. Reuben Thompson Gee (1844-1922), son of Wilson P. Gee and Drucilla Gilliam, married Gertrude Gist.

4. Wilson Gee (1888.....) is the son of Reuben T. Gee and Gertrude Gist.

Dr. Gee's descent from Lt.-Col. Charles Sims is to be found in his essay on "The Gist Family" (*Supra*) on pp. 47 and 48, note.

CHAPTER X.

GEORGE SIMS AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

George Sims, supposed to have been the fourth son of George Symes and Elizabeth, his wife, must have been born in 1693, if he was the George Sims who was living upon land in St. Paul's Parish, New Kent County, processioned by John Sims and John Shelton on September 28, 1711, as shown by St. Paul's Vestry Book, p. 162.¹ That would make him about eighteen years old at the processioning time.

But if that George was the son, and if he was the fourth son of George and Elizabeth, then the next son Edward could not have been over sixteen years old in 1711; which is a little too young for Edward to have been "ranging" about the country looking for a settlement in September, 1711, as is recited in the Vestry Minute just referred to. Moreover, in all the vestry entries from 1711 to that of March 7, 1743, Edward is mentioned before George Sims; although that may have been due to the location of their respective lands.

Therefore it is more likely that the George mentioned in the September 28, 1711, Minute was George Symes the father, formerly of Isle of Wight, especially as George Symes, Senior, did not turn up to prosecute his suit in Surry Court on June 20, 1711, against John Lane, when, in his absence the suit was dismissed for want of prosecution.²

If Edward was an older son than George, Junior, then Edward was born about 1693, and George was born about 1695, and probably remained in Isle of Wight or Surry with his oldest brother Adam when his father

¹See pp. 86-87, *supra*.

²See Surry County Order Book for 1691-1713, p. 370. And see Chapter I, p. 23, *supra*.

and mother moved to New Kent. This would account for his taking a grant in Brunswick County at about the same time as his brother Adam, whither Adam had moved in 1726. Land Book 13, p. 69, in the State Land Office in Richmond, shows a grant of 250 acres in Brunswick County to Adam Sims of Brunswick County, dated October 31, 1726, and the same book and page show also a grant of 270 acres on the south side of Meherin River, or Rattlesnake Creek, to George Sims of Brunswick County, on the same date. The County is not named in George's grant, but the location is at least part in Brunswick County.

The date is not conclusive of the time of application, however, as we saw from the long time between the application by George (probably George, Senior), for 3,000 acres in New Kent in 1718, approved in 1723 to John, Matthew, and George Sims, and not granted until 1727.

George, Senior, must have died in Hanover about 1723; and about 1725, George, Junior, moved to Hanover (or to that part of New Kent which became Hanover after 1720), evidently having agreed with John and Matthew to take the 3,000 acres with them. Then he applied for two more grants, and received them on August 25, 1725, as George Sims of Hanover County—two patents of 200 and 400 acres respectively, copies of which appear in Land Book 12, p. 232, in the State Land Office in Richmond.

Then on June 27, 1733, George Sims, now calling himself of Hanover, conveyed the 270 acres which he had acquired in Brunswick by grant in 1726, to his nephew William "Syms" of Brunswick, a son of Adam Syms, as shown by Mrs. Jane Morris in her essay on Adam Symes and His Descendants. Comparison of the description in the grant with that in George's deed to William shows it to have been the same land. This

deed is of record in Book I, p. 78, in the Clerk's Office in Brunswick County.

George Sims, Junior, had a wife named Sarah, but her surname has not been learned. Under date of July 3, 1735, George Sims, of St. Martin's Parish in Hanover County, and "Saras" Sims, his wife, conveyed by lease and release to James Hall of the same Parish and County 200 acres said to have been acquired by grant August 17, 1723, which is probably a part of the land actually received by George in 1725, although the metes and bounds do not agree sufficiently to prove it.

The record of this deed is preserved in Hanover County, Virginia, Court Records, 1733-1735, p. 277, in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library, at Richmond.

The only other deed made by George Sims, of which we know, is one from "George Sims, Sr." to John Walton, evidently his son-in-law, and is made in consideration of the love and affection he bore to John Walton and his wife Mary. It is dated February 2, 1737, and is signed by George Sims, alone, his wife Sarah evidently having died by that time. The deed does not give the acreage, but describes the land conveyed by metes and bounds. George describes himself as "George Sims, Sr. of the Parish of Saint Martin in the County of Hanover," which of course he was at that time, George of Surry being dead. The deed was not recorded anywhere, but was preserved in the Walton family, until recent times. A copy was long ago made, however, and by some chance came into possession of the Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania, W. H. Black, Esq., a descendant of John and Mary Walton, having furnished the author of this essay the following:

"Deed from George Sims to John Walton and Mary Sims, copied from a copy in the Mervine Collection

of letters in the possession of the Genealogical Society at the Pennsylvania Historical Society, 13th and Locust Street, Philadelphia, Pa. The original deed was held by John M. Walton, Crewes, Ala., at the time the copy was made. It has since perished in a fire, we are told. Copy made by W. H. Black, Dec. 2, 1935.

"File No. 412 of the Genealogical Society bound volumes of MSS.

"This Indenture made this Second day of February in the year of our Lord Christ one thousand Seven Hundred & thirty Seven Between George Sims Sr of the Parish of Saint Martin in the County of Hanover of the one Part and John Walton of the same Parish & County of the other Part

"Witnesseth that the said George Sims for and in Consideration of the Natural Love and affection which he hath & Beareth unto the said John Walton and Mary his wife hath given granted and by these Presents doth give grant and Confirm to the said John Walton one Certain Tract or Parcel of Land Lying and being in the Parish & County aforesaid and bounded as follows

"Beginning at John Sims's corner on the Haven beam (?) at the mouth of Short Branch on the Little River Down to George Sims's Hickory thence along the said George Sims's Line to a Corner Hickory by Abram Spencer's quarter Fence thence along the said Spencer's Line to John Sims's corner Spanish oak and other marked Saplings thence from the said Spanish oak in a Strait Line to the Beginning and all the Estate right, Title, Interest use Property, claim and Demand whatsoever of him the said George Sims his heirs or assigns or to the Premises with the appurtenances and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders Rents and services of all and singular the Premises with their and Every of their appurtenances To Have and To Hold the said Land as above bounded and all and Singular other the Premises Hereinbefore mentioned and Intended to be hereby Granted unto the said John Walton his Heirs and

assigns forever and the said George Sims for himself his Heirs Exrs. and administrators doth Covenant to and with the said John Walton his Heirs and assigns by these Presents that he the said George Sims now is and standeth Lawfully and rightfully seized of in and to the said Land above bounded with the appurtenances of a Good Sure, Perfect absolute and indefensible Estate of Inheritance in Fee Simple and now Hath good right, full Power Lawful and absolute authority to grant and Convey according to the purpose true intent & Meaning of these Presents and that it shall and may be Lawful to and for the said John Walton his Heirs and assigns from time to time and at all times for Ever Hereafter Peaceably and Quietly to have, hold, Occupy Possess, use and enjoy the said Land as above Conveyed with the appurtenances without the let Hindrance or molestation of him the said George Sims his heirs assigns or any other Person or Persons whatsoever and him and them Save harmless and Keep Indemnified and maintain of and from all incumbrances whatsoever (the quit rents from henceforth arising and becoming due to his Majesty Excepted) and the said George Sims his Heirs Exrs. and admrs. the aforesaid granted Premises with the appurtenances unto the said John Walton his Heirs and assigns for ever against him the said George Sims his heirs exrs. and admrs. and all Claiming or to Claim any Right Title Interest, Property Claim or Demand whatsoever by from under him them or any of them or any other Person or Persons, hath and wil warrant and for Ever Defend by these Presents.

"In witness whereof the said George Sims hath hereunto interchangeably set his hand and affixed his Seal the day and year first above written.

"George Sims (Seal—a kind of
red heart wafer on wax)

"Sealed and Delivered
in the Presence of us

"John Sims

"Robert Sharp

"Wm. Darwin"

"No notation as to recording of above deed. The copy is as near as could be made after the original copy, which John M. Walton stated was as near to the original as he could make, the original being in a good state of preservation when the copy was made in 1903, by said Walton. W.H.B. 1935."

John Walton, who married George Sims' daughter, Mary, as may be deduced from the above deed, as well as from the family records of their descendants, continued to live until his death upon the above granted land. The Grant of 632 acres obtained by John Sims, Junior, under date of February 10, 1748, in Land Book 27, p. 87, in the State Land Office gives one of the boundaries as John Walton's line. So he was certainly living there in 1748. But whether John Walton was the brother, or the cousin of the Mary Walton who married George Sims, the son of Adam, in Brunswick County, as shown in Mrs. Jane Morris' book, the genealogists who have traced the family line seem to be uncertain.

The only other preserved record transaction of George Sims is his bond as administrator of the estate of Matthew Snead, dated April 3, 1735, in Hanover Court Records for 1733-1735, p. 212, in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library, discussed in Chapter IV.³ So we know little of his other children.

The deed to John Walton, in referring to George Sims as senior at the time 1737, shows, however, that he probably had a son named George. Colonial military records show that there was a George Sims in the military service in Louisa County in 1755 or 1758, until his honorable discharge. This must have been the son of George Sims.⁴ But except for that George, assumed to have been George, Junior, and Mary, who married

³See p. 49 (supra).

⁴The author received this information from other investigators than his own, and has not the reference to the military record.

John Walton, no data of the children of George Sims, Sr., seem to be obtainable.

The descendants of John Walton and Mary Sims have been traced by Wm. H. Black, Esq., of the Pullman Company, Chicago, one of their descendants. They are as follows:

Children of John Walton and Mary Sims.

1. George, d. 1800, m. Elizabeth Jennings,
2. John, Jr., b. 1738, d. 1793, m. Mary Baker,
3. Simeon, b. 1741, d. 1798, m. Agnes Hester,
4. Edward, d. 1819, m. Barbara Hester,
5. Mary, m. William Baker,
6. Jesse, d. 1821, m. Ann,
7. Elizabeth, m. Isham Watkins, Sr.,
8. Robert, d. 1836,
9. Frances, d. 1844, m. Wm. Thomson,
10. William, d. 1811,
11. Mezapina, d. 1811, m. Robt. Harris,
12. Newell, b. 1763, d. 1834, m. Agnes Woolfolk.

George Walton went to Wilkes County, Georgia, became a captain in the Revolution and received grants of land for service, left Georgia about 1786, for Mississippi (then Spanish), and died at Natchez in 1800.

John, Jr., remained in Louisa County.

Simeon went to Bracken County, Kentucky.

Edward went to Mecklenburg County, Virginia, then to Kentucky, and his estate was wound up in Montgomery County, Tennessee.

Jesse went to Amelia or Nottaway County, Virginia, and was a soldier in the Revolution.

Robert went to Lincoln County, Georgia, after the Revolution, and was a Justice, and a State Senator there.

William lived in Hanover County, Virginia.

Newell married in Louisa County, Virginia, went to Georgia, and died in Abbeville, South Carolina.

John Walton, Jr., and Mary Baker had thirteen children, the Bible record having been passed down through the family, and marriages have been added from other sources—chiefly Louisa County marriage bonds, and death records where found:

Ann born 5-31-1758 Married William Edwards, Went to Robertson Co., Tenn. Revolutionary pensioner.

—Joel born 9-20-1739 Married Sarah Sims, Lived in Louisa Co., Va. Revolutionary pensioner.

Martin born 10-1-1761 Married Elizabeth Johnson, Went to Robertson Co., Tenn. Revolutionary Pensioner.

Temperance born 4-26-1764 Married Richard Knuckolls, Went to Robertson Co., Tenn. Revolutionary Pensioner.

Frederick born 1-14-1766 Died young.

John born 11-3-1767 Married Nancy Smith.

Garland born 11-8-1769 Never married.

Frances born 10-30-1771 Married Henry Lipscomb, Lived in Louisa Co., Va.

Meredith born 3-28-1774 Married Ann Sharp, Went to Tennessee.

Simeon born 8-11-1776 Married Elizabeth Walton, Went to Northern Kentucky.

Mary born 9-19-1778 Married Richard Yancey, Lived in Mecklenburg Co., Va.

Nelson born 11-6-1780

William born 6-27-1784 died 9-8-1862 Married Barbara Walton, Lived in Boone Co., Ky. Kentucky Soldier War of 1812.

William, the youngest son of John Walton and Barbara Walton, his wife, had thirteen children, born from 1805 to 1831, inclusive. They were named, John, Mere-

dith, Frederick, Mary, Ann, Susanna, Tabitha, Simeon B., Amanda, Eliza, Missouri, William and Lucy.

Their eighth child, Simeon Baker Walton, born in Boone County, Kentucky, 11/9, 1818, married Elizabeth Stark, a native of Scotland, in Hancock County, Illinois, 1/6, 1842, and had seven children born from 1843 to 1859, William, George, David, Margaret, Ezekial, Mary and Sylvia.

Their sixth child, Mary E. Walton, born 8/30, 1856, married William Black, 12/9, 1875, who lived in Hancock County, Illinois. His parents were William Stewart Black and Lucinda Millen, of Todd County, Kentucky. They had five children, Frank, Charles, Paul, Nellie, and William, born from 1879 to 1891. Their youngest child, William H. Black, was born 9/15, 1891, married Mabel C. Johnson, of Chicago, 3/15, 1916.

William H. Black, who furnished these data, has one child, William Stewart Black, born 9/21, 1918.

CHAPTER XI.

EDWARD SIMS AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

Edward Sims was either the fifth son of George Symes and his wife Elizabeth, or the fourth son, according to whether George, Junior, was older or younger than Edward, as discussed in the last chapter.

Edward was evidently occupying land in New Kent or Hanover County, or rather in St. Paul's Parish, from the processioning in 1711, through the processioning in 1751, as shown by the Vestry Minutes, copied in Chapter VI and Chapter VIII, *supra*; although we have pointed out that the Edward who acted as processioner in 1751, set out in Chapter VIII, p. 108, may well have been a younger Edward Sims, probably a son of John Sims and Mary Rice.

But however that may have been, Edward, Sr., certainly obtained a part of the original 1,000 acres held in the name of John Sims in 1704; and Edward did not take any part in the 3,000 acres applied for by George Sims, Sr., in 1718; and finally granted to John, Matthew, and George, in 1727. Edward's only other acquisition of land, so far as the records show, was 400 acres adjoining "the line of the Sims grant in the County of Hanover," which he received by a grant dated September 28, 1728, as shown by Land Book 13, page 313, of the records in the State Land Office in Richmond.

After 1742 this 400 acres seems to have lain in Louisa County. But Edward, Sr. probably remained in St. Paul's Parish, Hanover County; for St. Paul's Vestry Book, Vol. I, p. 123, folio 76, shows that on October 8, 1743, Edward Sims was allowed pay for a barrel of corn furnished to David Bourne; and Volume I, p. 105, folio 11, shows that Edward Sims was paid by the Vestry thirty pounds of tobacco for keeping the Widow Garrard; and

Volume II, p. 135, shows that on November 5, 1754, Edward was paid one pound six shillings for corn furnished to George Arnold.

So Edward Sims, Senior, probably lived in St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, as late as 1755, and died there about that time.

Whom Edward Sims married, we don't know; but his wife was probably named Brewster, or Bruster; for Edward had a son named Bruster, as may be deduced from the fact of a conveyance made by "Bruster Sims of St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, to John Hawkins of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover," of "eighty-eight acres, more or less," in the County of Louisa, dated October 6, 1763, of record in Deed Book D, p. 94, of Louisa records.

The description of this deed says the land granted lies adjoining land of "the said John Hawkins;" and another deed in Deed Book A, p. 414, dated March 26, 1751, shows that John Sims of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover, and wife Rebecca, had conveyed to John Hawkins of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover, 200 acres in the County of Louisa on the south side of Little River, being part of a greater tract, patented to Edward Sims dated September 28, 1728.

It would seem that John Hawkins moved from Hanover County to the land granted to him by John Sims and Rebecca in 1751, and in 1763 acquired land adjoining from Bruster Sims, and both John and Bruster were sons of Edward, Sr.

Edward Sims (Sr.), "of St. Paul's Parish, Hanover," had himself granted to Thomas Rice of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover, 120 acres in St. Martin's Parish, Louisa, on January 4, 1749, as shown by Deed Book A, p. 393, of Louisa records; and the description in each of these three deeds refers to "John Tait's" line. So Mrs. Jane Morris in a letter to the author of this essay, figured out that

these three deeds, for 120 acres, 200 acres, and 88 acres, respectively (the last being 88 "more or less"), had together conveyed from Edward, Sr., and two of his sons the 400 acres originally granted to Edward, Senior, by the Colony in 1728; and were sufficient proof that John and Bruster were two of the sons of Edward Sims.

Mrs. Morris identifies another son as the James Sims who conveyed 425 acres in St. Martin's Parish, Louisa County, "whereon the said James Sims now lives" (the instrument says) to John Blair and John Blair, Jr., of Williamsburg, to secure a judgment obtained by the Blairs against James Sims and Thomas Langford for 1700 pounds, probably for plantation advances.

This mortgage (for that is its import) was dated March 9, 1753, and is of record in Deed Book A, p. 510, of Louisa records.

James then seems to have moved to Bruton Parish in York County; for in Deed Book 7, p. 40, York County Records, is a deed from James Sims, Planter, of Bruton Parish, York County, to Wm. Frebell of the City of Williamsburg, an "ordinary keeper," conveying 35 acres in that County and Parish for 125 pounds.

James Sims continued to live in York County, and died there in 1774. His will, dated September 16, 1774, probated November 21, 1774, is in York County Wills & Inventories, No. 22 (1771-1783) p. 243, at Yorktown; and among other bequests, gives 20 pounds to William Sims, son of Brewster Sims. And Mrs. Morris says the will refers to William as the son of his brother.¹ The will made John Hawkins of Hanover County an executor.

Mrs. Morris also says, in her book on Adam Symes and His Descendants, that this William Sims son of

¹See Letter from Mrs. Morris to the author of this essay, dated April 14, 1937.

Bruster moved later to Maury County, Tennessee, as the records of that County show.

Edward Sims, Sr., probably also had a son named Alexander, named for Alexander Snead. It will be remembered that Edward was bondsman for George Sims as administrator of the estate of Matthew Snead, and that Matthew Snead was the son of Alexander Snead, whose wife, Mary, was evidently a sister of George and Edward.² An Alexander Simms died in Westmoreland County in 1745, leaving a will dated June 26, 1744, probated October 29, 1745, which names a son Edward, and leaves him half of his land. Other children named were Henry, the oldest, and Franklin, and Bethlehem, and a daughter Margaret. Nothing more is known of them.

Then naturally Edward Sims, Sr., had a son named Edward. Louisa record, Vol. C1/2, p. 60, is the record of a deed from Edward Sims of St. Martin's Parish, Louisa County, and wife Elizabeth, to George Kersey, of Hanover County, dated February 12, 1765, conveying 139 acres in Louisa County. Matthew Sims, Junior, witnessed this deed.

This Edward then moved to Bute County, North Carolina, later named Warren County, where he had acquired, on January 29, 1765, from Robert Abernathy, Jr., 400 acres of land. See Warren County, North Carolina, records, Book A, p. 133. The deed recites that Edward Sims was of Louisa County, Virginia. Edward Sims died in Warren County, North Carolina, in 1789, leaving a will of record in Book 6, p. 72, which gave his property to his wife Elizabeth Sims for life, then to his children; and a quitclaim from his children, in 1794, shows that he had no sons, but that he had four daughters.

²See p. 49, *supra*.

In Warren County, North Carolina, there is also the record of a will of Sherwood Sims, made in 1789, wherein Sherwood leaves his property to sons, Sherwood, Matthias, and Thomas, and daughters Betty Watkins, Mary Kee, and Fanny Sims. This will is in Book 5, p. 151, Warren County records.

Of course these two, Edward and Sherwood, may not have been sons of Edward Sims, Sr., but of one of the others. There is nothing to show which one was their father. But neither of them is shown on the Matthew Sims genealogical chart, discussed in Chapter IX, *supra*. Or they may have been the sons of James Sims, Sr., whose descendants are discussed in the next chapter.

In Louisa County Deed Book A, p. 414, is the record of a deed from John Sims of St. Martin's Parish, Hanover County, dated March 26, 1851, conveying to John Hawkins land which the deed recites constituted a part of the 400 acres originally granted to Edward Sims, September 28, 1728. This shows that this John was a son of Edward. John's wife Rebecca Sims joined in the deed. Rebecca was also a Sims. On p. 19 of Vol. VI of Virginia County Records as reprinted from Hanover County Order Book for 1733, in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library, is the abstract of the will of Paul Harralson of New Kent County, dated August 15, 1718, probated 1731, in which he names his wife Rebecca, sons Peter and Paul, daughters Ann Chiles and Judith, and leaves a slave to his granddaughter, Rebecca Sims. The will was witnessed by John "Sneed," John Meeks, and John "Sneed," Jr. We also find in Vol. 1 of Virginia County Records (reprint from records in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library) that Deed Book C, for 1734-1742, in Spottsylvania County, contains a lease from Alexander Spottswood, Esq., to Thomas Sims, planter, for 103

acres of land in St. Mark's Parish, Spottsylvania County, which mentions Thomas Sims and Rebecca Sims his wife, and a son Thomas. Also Orange County, Virginia, Order Book 4, p. 185, shows that Thomas Simms acknowledged deeds, and his wife, Rebecca, joined him.

We have endeavored to prove in Chapter V, at p. 71, *supra*, that the Thomas Sims who married Rebecca Harralson was a son of William Symes of New Kent, Virginia, and that William was the William who was a younger brother of Captain George Symes of Antigua.

So that both John Sims of St. Martin's Parish and Rebecca his wife were descendants of William Symes of Chard in Somersetshire.

Nothing more has been learned of Edward Sims and his descendants.

CHAPTER XII.

JAMES SIMS AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

James Sims was the sixth son of George Sims of Isle of Wight and his wife Elizabeth. And that brings us to a real puzzle to find his descendants.

In Volume 2 of Tyler's Quarterly Historical & Genealogical Magazine, p. 265, is an article on a "James Simms," born in 1750 in Frederick County, Virginia, on the Maryland line. In answer to an inquiry by the author of this essay, the Clerk of the Court in Frederick County writes that there are not any records of Sims marriages or business transactions in Frederick County.¹

The article in Tyler's Magazine says that this James Simms was the son of James and Sarah Sims, and that the senior James moved from Frederick County to Pittsylvania County, on the North Carolina line, and died there in 1773, leaving a will dated August 6, 1772, which names his brothers, Matthew and John Sims, as his executors. See also 19 Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, p. 424, which gives an abstract of his will.

This will of James Sims, deceased, was proved in Pittsylvania Court by Matthew Sims and John Sims as executors, and on their motion appraisers were appointed to value the estate.² So both this Matthew and this John Sims were living at the time.

Who then were these three Sims brothers, James, Matthew and John? They were not sons of John Sims, Sr., because, as we shall see in the next Chapter, John Sims, the son of John, Sr., and Mary Rice, had

¹Letter of March 5, 1936.

²See the record in "Judgments, 1772-1775," No. 2, in Pittsylvania County. The author of this essay has a certified copy of the orders.

moved to Granville County, North Carolina, in 1754, and died there in 1765. They were not sons of Edward Sims, Sr.; because we have just seen that Edward's son James died in York County in 1774. They may have been sons of Matthew Sims, Sr. But if they were such, then the Matthew who acted as joint executor was Matthew Sims, Jr.; and he would have had to go down from Louisa County to Pittsylvania County from time to time to perform his duties as executor. And whether Matthew, Junior, moved later to South Carolina,³ he was living in Louisa until 1777 or later; for on June 3, 1777, he acquired from Richard Dabney 338 acres in Louisa County, see Deed Book E, p. 171.

There is no other extant record tending to show that Matthew, Sr., had a son named James, or a son named John; although of course he may have had sons by those names. The Hanover and Louisa records show several deeds by James Sims hard to account for;⁴ but John who was also James' executor in Pittsylvania County in 1773, if a son of Matthew, Sr., must have gone thither in his early manhood, and the record of a conveyance of his interest in his father's estate in Hanover must have been destroyed. Certainly there is nothing in Louisa records to show that a John Sims who could have been the son of Matthew, Sr., conveyed any land.

The article in 2 Tyler's Magazine, p. 265, says that the James Sims who was born in Frederick County in 1750, married on February 15, 1783, in Henry County, Elizabeth Sims, who may have been the daughter of James Sims and Elizabeth Saunders. But if she was their daughter, she was born probably not earlier than 1768, and was about eighteen years younger than her husband; which was unusual at that day.

³There is a tradition among his descendants that he moved to South Carolina after the Revolution. See p. 118, *supra*.

⁴See p. 112, *supra*.

This same James, who was born in Frederick County, later moved to Blount County, Tennessee, and died there in 1836, as shown by the article in 2 Tyler's Magazine; and he was a soldier in the Revolutionary Army. He enlisted first in Frederick County, and again in Abingdon, Washington County, whither he had moved. Many of his descendants are given in the article in 2 Tyler's Magazine.

But there is another solution to the problem of these three brothers, John, Matthew, and James. They may have been sons of the James Sims, whom we have identified as the youngest son of the original George Sims of Isle of Wight and his wife Elizabeth.⁵

That James Sims and his wife Elizabeth who had been Elizabeth Parish, were living in St. Peter's Parish when they had a son Edward born to them May 20, 1730.⁶ And it was probably that James Sims who, on March 3, 1733, acquired from James Montray of St. Martin's Parish, for twenty pounds, 400 acres in St. Martin's Parish, Hanover County, the conveyance of which, by the old method of lease and release, is preserved in Virginia Court Records of Hanover County, for 1733-35, p. 271, in the Archives Division in the Virginia State Library. And also it was probably this James who was co-surety with Edward Sims on the administrator's bond of George Sims for the estate of Matthew Snead in 1735.⁷ This James Sims may well have had sons, James, Matthew and John, as well as the son Edward who was born in 1732; and his son James may have gone first to Frederick County, and from there to Pittsylvania where he died in 1773. So that the James who was born in Frederick County in 1750 was the grandson of James the youngest son of the original George Sims, and not the grandson of Matthew, Sr.

⁵See p. 82, *supra*.

⁶St. Peter's Parish Register, p. 485.

⁷*Idem*, p. 212.

On the whole this seems the most probable solution.

His descendants in Tennessee can be traced by the article in 2 Tyler's Magazine, p. 265.

James' son Edward born in 1732 may have been the Edward Sims who sold lands in Louisa County in 1765, referred to in the last Chapter, and who went to Warren County, North Carolina, and died there in 1789, leaving four daughters as his only children.

If that is true, then James was also very likely the father of the Sherwood Sims who died in Warren County, North Carolina, about 1789, leaving sons Sherwood, Matthias, and Thomas, and daughters Betty (Elizabeth) Watkins, Mary Kee, and Fanny Sims. See Book 5, p. 151, of Warren County, North Carolina, records.

That there was an original James Sims who had sons James, Matthew, John, Edward, and Sherwood, seems very probable indeed.

CHAPTER XIII.

DESCENDANTS OF THE CHILDREN OF JOHN SIMS, SR.,
AND MARY RICE.*I. John Sims, Jr.*

In Chapter VIII the sons of John Sims, Sr., and his wife Mary Rice were given as John, Thomas, Micajah, David, and Sherwood, and probably Edward and James. No daughters are known.

The sequence of the sons is not known. It was suggested in that chapter¹ that John, Junior, must have been the eldest, with Thomas closely following him. But Thomas may have been born as late as 1726, and still have been in Granville County, North Carolina, in 1744, and in the North Carolina Militia in 1780, as stated in Chapter VIII.² There were two other Thomas Simses in Warren County, North Carolina, just prior to 1795, the date of the will of Leonard Sims, the son of John, Jr., which refers to land of "Thomas Sims' widow."³ One of them was Thomas, the son of Leonard, mentioned in the same will; and of course that Thomas was not dead. And the other Thomas was a son of Sherwood, the son of the original James Sims, as we have suggested in Chapter XII. Sherwood's will was dated 1790, witnessed by Leonard Sims, and names a son Thomas. So this Thomas, the son of Sherwood, may have been dead in 1795, leaving a widow, whose land adjoined the land of Leonard. Moreover, the United States Census record of 1800 for Warren County, North Carolina, p. 150, shows only one Thomas Sims, with one male, 45 up, and family; which was probably Leonard's son.

¹See p. 110.

²Ibid.

³Ibid. Leonard Sims' will was probated in 1804.

A letter written by Elisha Sims, Jr., dated December 3, 1832, to David Royster at Raleigh, North Carolina, the husband of his sister, Susan Sims,⁴ says: "I was in Wilson this fall and saw Uncle Thomas Sims and Aunt Molly; they are as well as could be expected. Uncle Thomas is hearty but cannot walk."

If this Thomas, who was alive in 1832, was the son of John Sims, Sr., and Mary Rice, he was more than a hundred years old at the time the letter was written. This being impossible, Thomas the son of John, Sr. must have been dead in 1795, the Thomas named in the letter was the son of Sherwood, and the term "Uncle" misapplied. We know nothing more of Thomas, the son of John Sims, Sr., nor of Thomas the son of Sherwood, although the records in Lebanon, Wilson County, Tennessee, may tell something of his descendants.

Nor do we know anything at all of the descendants of David Sims, the son of John Sims, Sr., and Mary Rice, nor of the descendants of Edward and James, also probably their sons. Therefore we shall limit ourselves to the descendants of their sons John Sims, Jr., Micajah Sims, and Sherwood Sims, of whom we know much.

John Sims, Junior, married Sarah Bullock. They were married in Hanover County, Virginia, about 1735. As we have seen⁵ he was born about 1713, and she was born about 1720. She was the oldest child of Richard Bullock, of Hanover County, according to the estimate of Mrs. Zebulon Judd, a descendant. The proof that John Sims, Jr., married Sarah, the daughter of Richard Bullock, is irrefutable. Under date of February 10, 1748, John Sims obtained a grant of 632 acres

⁴This letter is in the possession of the Royster family in Raleigh. The author of this essay has a copy of a copy.

⁵p. 110, *supra*.

of land in Louisa County "on the branches of Locust and Hinson Creeks." "Beginning at Matthew Sims (deceased) his corner pine," etc. This grant is of record in Book 27, page 87, in the State Land Office at Richmond. The grant is listed in Appendix IV to this essay. On August 27, 1754, John Sims of St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, planter, and Sarah, his wife, conveyed this same land, for 126 pounds, current money of Virginia, to William Dickinson. See Deed Book B, page 18, Louisa County records. On June 2, 1752, Samuel Henderson of the County of Granville, in the Province of North Carolina, had sold and conveyed to John Sims of the County of Hanover in Virginia, 800 acres of land on both sides of Nutbush Creek, in said County of Granville.⁶ The will of Richard Bullock, dated October 27, 1764, proved in the November Court (apparently the same year) is in the records of the Superior Court at Oxford in Granville County, North Carolina, a certified copy of the will is in the possession of the author of this essay, the certificate of the Deputy Clerk being as follows: "This is to certify that the foregoing is a true and perfect copy of the will of Richard Bullock, filed in this office. There is no record of this will having been recorded." A copy of the will is in Appendix V to this essay. An item of the will is, "I give and bequeath to my daughter Sarah Sims one shilling sterling."

A minute in St. Paul's Parish Register, Hanover County, Virginia, p. 220, dated March 23, 1743, shows that the *land of Richard Bullock was proccessioned* in St. Paul's Parish, Hanover, in March, 1743. When Richard Bullock moved from Hanover to Granville County, North Carolina, has not been ascertained;

⁶A certified copy of the record of the deed from John Sims and wife to Dickinson, and also of that from Henderson to John Sims are in the possession of the author.

but it was certainly prior to 1760; as his son-in-law John Sims conveyed land to him in Granville County in that year. See Deed Book D, p. 160, Granville County. John Sims acquired land in Granville in addition to the 800 acres first purchased in 1752, on at least two occasions. See Deed Book C, p. 651, in 1759, and Deed Book E, p. 253, in 1762. So he probably bought and sold land to a considerable extent as his will, later discussed, will show.

Richard Bullock's wife is not referred to by name in his will; but it is generally accepted that her name was Ann Hendley, certainly at the time of this will. There is a deed in Hanover County records (Book 1734-5) the abstract of which appears in 21 William & Mary Quarterly, first series, p. 48, by which Richard Bullock and wife "Kate" conveyed 120 acres in St. Martin's Parish, Hanover County, to David Chrenshaw in 1733. And if this was the Richard Bullock (he signed by a mark) who married Ann Hendley, she must have been his second wife. The will gives to his "two youngest sons Leonard Hendley and Nathaniel Bullock all my estate except what is otherwise devis'd to be equally divided between them." So they were probably young boys at the date of the will. Therefore if Richard Bullock had a wife named Kate in 1733, his first wife, Kate, was of course the mother of Sarah Sims. Kate's surname we don't know.

But John and Sarah Sims named their third son, born about 1740, Leonard Hendley, as we shall see. And she would not likely have named her son for an uncle near his own age—Leonard Hendley Bullock. So we may well conclude that Leonard H. Sims was named for Sarah Sims' grandfather, Leonard Hendley, the father of her mother, Ann Hendley Bullock. And the Richard Bullock who with his wife Kate signed the deed to 120 acres of land in Hanover in 1733, must then have

been a cousin of the Richard Bullock who moved to Granville County in 1754.

Let us review the earlier data on the Bullocks in New Kent and Hanover Counties. Virginia County Records, Vol. 6, p. 271, shows that a land grant of 100 acres was made to Richard Bullock in New Kent County in 1668. The Vestry Book of St. Peter's Parish (reprint, p. 19) shows that on 4th of May, 1689, both Richard Bullock, Sr., and Richard Bullock, Jr., were ordered to procession lands. The Quit Rent Rolls for 1704 list a Richard Bullock and also an Edward Bullock as holding 450 acres each in the Parish of St. Peter and St. Paul, New Kent County, in that year. Hanover was not cut from New Kent until 1720, it will be recalled. The Valentine Papers, p. 1720, quote Virginia Land Book 14, p. 471, that Richard Bullock, Jr., held land in Hanover in 1725; and Valentine Papers, p. 1638, show that an Edward Bullock and a Robert Bullock held land in Hanover in 1734, their lines being used in a deed from Vinkler Cobb to one John Humber, on December 5, 1734. Hanover Records for 1733-35, p. 159. Then Valentine Papers, p. 2171, quote a deed in Volume 1, p. 119, of Hanover records, dated September 3, 1734, which was witnessed by an Edward Bullock, Jr. Also it appears from 6 Virginia County Records, Hanover Wills, p. 19, quoting Hanover Order Book for 1732 that Edward Bullock, Jr., was witness to a will of Robert Searcy, August 2, 1733—March 2, 1734. Also in St. Peter's Parish Register (reprint, p. 345) there is the entry of the baptism of a Richard, son of Edward Bullock by Sarah, April 16, 16—, the nearest date below being 1703. This may well have been the Richard who with his wife Kate signed the deed to David Chrenshaw in 1733.

Again there is reported to be a will in Prince William County, at Mannassas, of a Richard Bullock, dated

February 1, 1738-9, which has been abstracted as follows: His whole estate, real and personal, is given to his wife Susanna for life; and at her death 300 acres of his land is given to his son Thomas; to his daughter Rachel Bullock, 300 acres adjoining, and two named slaves; the rest of his land on the south side of Beaver Dam, and three named slaves, to his son Richard Bullock; to daughter Sarah Bullock all the land on the northeast side of Beaver Dam, and two named slaves; to his son Thomas his short gun, and to his son Richard his long gun; trusty friends Chas. Morgan and John Graham, executors. The will was proved by Chas. Morgan, one of the executors, March 24, 1739.

In 4 Tyler's Magazine, p. 225, it is stated that at p. 215 of Will Book C, of Prince William County, there is an inventory of the Estate of Richard Bullock, dated May 26, 1740, the estate being appraised at 332 pounds, 15 shillings, 9 1/2 pence.

Of course the Richard Bullock who died in Prince William County in 1739 was the Richard Bullock on the Quit Rent roll of New Kent in 1704, and he was the father of Richard Bullock, Jr. His wife was named Susanna; he had daughters; Rachel and Sarah, and sons Thomas and Richard. The Richard who married Ann Hendley and moved to Granville County, North Carolina, and died there in 1764, who must have been Richard, Junior, of Hanover, in 1704, had daughters Susanna and Sarah.

Putting all this Bullock data together it would appear that the Richard Bullock who had a grant of 100 acres in New Kent County in 1668 was the father of the Richard and Edward Bullock each of whom had 450 acres in New Kent in 1704, as shown by the Quit Rent Rolls, that Richard of 1704 was the father of Richard, Jr., and Edward was the father of Edward Jr., and probably also of Robert, all of whom had land in 1734-5, and

that Richard, Jr., was the one who moved to North Carolina about 1755. Louisa Deed Book A., p. 525, shows that on August 28, 1753, Richard Bullock & Company of Hanover, Merchant, sold 400 acres of land, with cattle, negroes, &c., in Louisa County known as "Bullocks Quarter." This sale was doubtless in preparation for his moving to North Carolina. Louisa was a part of Hanover County until 1742, it will be recalled.

The identity of the Richard Bullock who received the grant of 100 acres in New Kent County in 1668 is difficult to trace; but he was probably a son of the Captain Richard Bullock who was a Council member of the Grand Assembly under Sir John Harvey, Governor, which met at James City February 1, 1632-3, as listed in 1 Hening's Statutes, p. 202. He is also listed as a member of the Governor's Council for 1632 in the alphabetical list of councilmen collected in 3 William and Mary Quarterly, first series, p. 65.

There were two Bullocks who were members of the Council at that time, as shown by the same list—Richard Bullock and Capt. Hugh Bullock, although Hugh Bullock does not appear in Hening's Statutes. The latter received a grant of 2,550 acres of land in York County from Sir John Harvey, March 12, 1634. See 1 Virginia Magazine, p. 414. They were evidently not the same man; for Capt. Hugh Bullock returned to London and died in 1650, leaving a will dated October 22, 1649, probated November 2, 1750, giving his son William and William's son Robert "his estate in Virginia amounting to 100 pounds per annum." See 18 Virginia Magazine 304-5. His will does not mention any son named Richard. But Richard and Capt. Hugh may have been brothers.

Robert remained in Virginia; and in 1672 brought a suit in his right as heir to William and Captain Hugh Bullock against Col. Peter Jennings, as guardian of the

orphans of Col. Samuel Matthews, deceased, in regard to 5,500 acres of land in Warwick County. See 3 William & Mary Quarterly, first series, p. 173, also 18 Virginia Magazine, p. 305, quoting Virginia General Court Records, April, 1672.

Returning to Ann Hendley, the wife of Richard Bullock of Granville, and the daughter of Leonard Hendley, or Henley, let us see who she was. Leonard Henley had 360 acres of land as listed on the Quit Rent Rolls of James City County in 1704. See 31 Virginia Magazine, p. 157. This patent had been issued October 26, 1694, Land Book 8, p. 397. A note on Leonard giving his wife and children is in 5 William & Mary Quarterly, first series, at pages 38 and 39. According to that note his wife was a "Miss" Richardson of New Kent County. This marriage is said to be noted in the Blissland Parish Register, but that Register is not in print. Only the Blissland Parish Vestry Book has been reprinted. She is said to have been a daughter of Richard Richardson, who was Burgess for New Kent County from 1727 to 1734. (See Reprint of Journal of the House of Burgesses, Volume for 1727-34, p. vii); but it seems that he accepted the office of Sheriff of New Kent in 1732, and resigned from the House. See the same volume of the Journal of the House, and also Tyler's Cyclopoedia of Virginia Biography, Volume I, p. 313.

Leonard Henley was elected a vestryman of Blissland Parish October 10, 1737. Major Richard Richardson was also a member at the time. See Vestry Book of Blissland Parish (reprint, p. 64).

As one of Leonard Henley's children, as given in the note in 5 William & Mary Quarterly, p. 38, was named Richardson Henley it may be assumed that his wife "Miss Richardson" was a daughter of Major Richard Richardson, the vestryman and member of the House of Burgesses from 1727 to 1732.

The children of Richard Bullock, as named in his will (see Appendix V, post) were as follows: a daughter, Sarah Sims, a daughter, Agnes Williams, a son, Zachariah Bullock, a son, William Bullock, a son, John Bullock and a daughter, Susannah Sims, a son, Leonard Hendley Bullock, a son, Nathaniel Bullock, and a daughter, Agatha Nucholls. He also names a granddaughter, Ann Nandych, evidently the child of a daughter Ann, probably dead at the date of the will.

It will be remembered that Susannah Sims was the wife of William Sims, the son of Adam Symes of Brunswick County, and a first cousin of John Sims who married Sarah Bullock. See p. 93, *supra*.

The children of John Sims and Sarah Bullock, as named in John Sims' will, dated February 10, 1765, and proved in Granville County at the August Court, 1766, a copy of which is in Appendix V, post,⁷ were as follows: (1) a son William Sims, (2) a son Elisha Sims, (3) a daughter Agnes (4) a daughter Dorcas, (5) a daughter Sarah (called Sally), (6) a son Leonard, (7) a daughter Susanna, (8) a daughter Mary, (9) a daughter Lucretia, and (10) an unborn child, who was a boy named Euphrates as appears from later records,⁸ who must have died young. The testator also left 100 acres of land to Frances Keeling, evidently the daughter of Agnes Keeling, deceased, Richard Bullock's daughter who married George Keeling, first, and John Williams secondly, according to Bullock family memoranda.

The testator did not give any land to his wife Sarah and only a life estate in some slaves. He must have intended her to have a life estate in all his lands, for he made her and his son Leonard executrix and executor of

⁷The author of this essay has both a certified copy, and a photostatic copy of the will.

⁸See a court order to appraise the value of the four negroes mentioned in the will. Court record at Oxford, May 5, 1767.

his will. But correction was made by deed, for in Book H, p. 204, of Granville County records is a deed from Leonard Sims to Sarah Sims, his mother.

No data of importance have been found of John Sims and Sarah his wife, nor is there anything of importance to note about their daughters.

So we consider only their three sons, William, Elisha, and Leonard.

William Sims of Warren County, mentioned first in his father's will, is assumed to have been the oldest child. He was evidently named for William Sims of Brunswick, who married Susannah Bullock. He must have been born about 1736, in Hanover County, Virginia, and have been about eighteen years old when his parents moved to North Carolina. There is no authentic record of his marriage, nor of his children, nor is there any record of his will, if he left one. There are, however, records of the following conveyances made by him:

August 30, 1766, William Sims, of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, to Leonard Sims, of Granville. Book H, p. 219, Granville Co. This deed is witnessed by their sisters, Dorcas Sims, and Sally Sims, and by Nathan Sims, whom we don't identify. "Mecklenburg Co. N. C." was clearly error in copying. Mecklenburg Co., Virginia, adjoins Granville County, North Carolina, and as we shall see, Leonard married there. So William evidently lived there at the time.

February 7, 1787. William Sims to Leonard Sims, both of Warren County, 100 acres on the west side of Smith's branch, bordering Simon Williams' line. Book 9, p. 95, Warren County.

February 24, 1795. William Sims to Leonard Sims, 99 1/4 acres, described by white oaks and poplars, on the long branch. Book 13, p. 289, Warren County.

December 13, 1803, William Sims, Sr., to Joseph T. Green, 150 acres, adjoining Leonard Sims' millpond.

Book 17, p. 64, Warren County. Wm. H. Sims was a witness.

January 10, 1807, William Sims to James Moss, 462 acres. This recites that Wm. Sims is living in Warren County. Book 17, p. 391, Warren Co.

There is a letter written May 7, 1905, by Joseph J. Allen, Esquire, of Louisburg, North Carolina, a descendant of William Sims, to Mrs. V. C. Royster (Hallie High) of Raleigh, a descendant of Elisha Sims, in which Mr. Allen refers to old family records and states his family tradition as to whom William Sims married and whom William's brother, Elisha Sims, married. The letter reveals total ignorance of his Sims ancestors behind John Sims and Sarah Bullock, and is erroneous as to some of Elisha Sims' children and Leonard Sims' children. But it is probably accurate as to William Sims' wife and children, as they were of his own line.

The letter is as follows:⁹

"Louisburg, N. C.
May 7th, 1905.

"Mrs. Hallie Royster,
306 Hillsboro St.
Raleigh, N. C.

My dear Cousin

"I have just gotten out my Sims genealogy given me by my mother in 1869, and it begins with old John Sims of Scotland who come here about 1750 and whom he married I do not know but at any rate he had three sons 'Len' (Leonard) who married Sallie Swepson, Elisha who married Sallie Howard and Billie (William) who married Betsy Howard a sister of the aforesaid Sallie Howard. Now Elisha Sims, after raising a family, left this country (for Ten-

⁹The letter was obtained through the courtesy of William H. Bason, Esq., of Raleigh, and copied June 8, 1936. Joseph J. Allen, of Louisburg, N. C. was the grandson of William Howard Sims (William H.) by his daughter Olive, and her second husband, Joseph Farrar Allen. This appears from the letter.

nessee I think) but had children as follows: Jack, Herberd, Julius, Zac, Elisha, Guilford, Irene, Thirsa, and Mahalah.

As mother gave me no descendants of these, I presume that she knew none of their posterity. Of Len Sims and Sallie Swepson were born as follows: Dick, Swep, John, Henley, Tom, Joe, Harry, 'Ginnie,' Susan, Sallie. Of these Dick married Rebecca Dromgoale, a sister of Edward Dromgoale who killed Dugger in a duel, and Dick's children were: Alexander, Dick, Sallie, Edward D. the great linguist and scholar, and Lizzie. Harry and Susanna or Susan as she was called married Burt's brother and sister. Joe had only one child James. John's children were: Nancy, Powell, Swep, Richard, James, Sallie. I think Ginnie married her cousin and her children were, Len, Tom, Sallie, Ginnie, and William. Susanna's children were nineteen in number of whom Mrs. John P. Arrington is a grand daughter. Harry's children were Lucretia, Swep and Sallie.

Now for old Billy who married Betsy Howard. Of them were born Dorcas, Lizzie, Bethene, Pollie, Sallie, Rebecca, Buck (Wm. Howard Sims my grandfather) John, Alfred, Jarratt. Buck Sims children were Orren, Olive, William, Susan, Leslie Jane, Lizzie Emma, and Luly. My mother was Olive Sims and first married Lewis Farrar Smith and of them were born Orren, Arra, Oliver, and Louis. She married the second time Joseph Farrar Allen and of them were born William and your

Devoted Cousin

Joseph John Allen."

There is a record of a mortgage by Wm. H. Sims to V. Vaughn, dated February 3, 1813, in Book 19, p. 262, of Warren County records. The land mortgaged was in Granville County, but the mortgage recites that William H. Sims lived in Warren County.

Elisha Sims of Warren County was the second son of John Sims and Sarah Bullock; at least his father's

will names him after William, and before Leonard. He was probably born therefore about 1738, in Virginia. There is no official record of his marriage or of his wife's name. The records of Mecklenburg County, Virginia, Granville and Warren Counties in North Carolina and the archives in Raleigh have been searched; but they reveal nothing. In 1769 he was living in Granville; for in that year Elisha Sims of Granville made a conveyance to Leonard Sims, of Granville, which is in Book H, p. 530, of Granville records.

In 1772, Elisha Sims moved to Warren County, or Bute County, as it was then; for on May 25, 1772, Julius Howard conveyed to secure 200 pounds to Elisha Sims, of Granville County, 230 acres in Warren County, with redemption right until December 10, 1774. See Book 7, p. 281, Warren County records. The paper was not recorded until 1780;¹⁰ and Elisha Sims evidently kept the land; for on January 14, 1801, he conveyed the same 230 acres to Wm. E. Johnson for 400 pounds. Book 18, p. 172, Warren County.

In 1771 John Howard of Bute (Warren) County, died, leaving a will dated September 24, 1770, probated February, 1771, in which he gave his personalty to his wife, Mary, and his plantation on which he lived to her for life or widowhood, then to his son Julius. He gave other land to sons, Thomas and John, and gave twenty shillings to each of his daughters. But he made "Elisha Simms" and Julius Howard his executors, and they qualified and returned an inventory on May 13, 1771. The will is of record in Will Book 1, p. 157, and the inventory is in Book A, p. 180, of Warren County records.¹¹ The testator does not call Elisha Sims his son-in-law, nor does he give the names of any of his daughters.

¹⁰The author of this essay has a certified copy of the deed.

¹¹The author of this essay has a certified copy of the will.

The author of this essay has the family record sheets taken from the family bible of Zachariah Sims, a son of Elisha Sims, upon which has been written, either by Elisha Sims' grand-daughter, Mrs. Sallie Sims Morton, or her husband, the late Rev. John B. Morton (both now dead), the following notation: "Zachariah Sims' mother was Anna Howard, daughter of John Howard of N. C. 1884." The question then is which was correct, the statement of Mr. Joseph J. Allen's mother, a collateral descendant, that Elisha's wife was Sally Howard, or the statement written in Zachariah Sims' bible, that Elisha's wife was Anna Howard?

Of course we don't know. Zachariah Sims had a daughter named Ann Sims, as shown by bible records; and another daughter named Sarah M. Sims. But the wife of Zachariah Sims was Sarah Mitchell, as shown by their marriage record at Oxford, in Granville County, dated September 7, 1801;¹² and the family bible shows that Sarah Mitchell had a sister named Ann. So Sarah M. Sims must have been named for Zachariah's wife, and Ann Sims may have been named for her aunt, Ann Mitchell.

—There was an Anna Howard, who married Martin Sims, January 20, 1782, as shown by the marriage records in Granville County; but she must have been the daughter of Julius Howard, as the Georgia records in Franklin County show that Martin Sims and his wife Anna J. had a son named Julius.¹³ So while that may prove that Julius had a sister, Anna, it does not prove, of course, that she was Elisha's wife.

Elisha Sims probably married John Howard's daughter, whether Anna or Sarah, about 1762, in Bute

¹²The author has a certified copy.

✓ ¹³Martin Sims was in Franklin Co., Ga. in 1802. See 1 Historical Collections of Georgia Chapters D. A. R., p. 288. His will, dated 4/7/1822, is in idem, p. 325, and his heirs on July 20, 1824, are named in Idem, p. 326. His widow was "Anner J."

(Warren County) or Granville County, North Carolina. There are deeds to Howards in Granville County as early as 1751; and in 1759-60 (No. 982), there is the record of the administration of the estate or the execution of a will of Eleander Howard, naming his wife, Mary, his mother, and brothers John and Peter Howard. At St. Paul's Parish Vestry meeting in Virginia held September 12, 1743, a John Howard was appointed a proccessioner for precinct or beat No. 17, while John Sims, Sr., was appointed for precinct 23.¹⁴ So John Howard of Bute County, North Carolina, probably came there from Hanover County, Virginia. Also books on the history of Lunenburg County, Virginia, just adjoining Mecklenburg County, Virginia, across the State line from Granville,¹⁵ show that John Howard was a leading man in the development of Lunenburg, and that the Howards settled first in the coast counties south of James River.

The names of Elisha Sims' children have been identified chiefly from the above letter of Mr. Joseph J. Allen, as compared with a letter written by Elisha Sims' son, Elisha Sims, Junior, in 1832, and which is still in possession of the same lady who holds that Joseph J. Allen letter. But the name of Susan Royster must be added to the list of Elisha's children as given in the two letters, because a memorial of Mrs. Susan Royster, printed at her death in 1864 has been preserved, which says that she was a daughter of Elisha Sims. The memorial is printed in Appendix V to this essay. Moreover the letter written by Elisha Sims, Junior, to David Royster of Raleigh, from Franklin County Tennessee, December 3, 1832, shows that David Royster had an equal interest with the others in the estate. The rea-

¹⁴See p. 107, *supra*.

¹⁵See "The Old Free State" by Landon C. Bell, in most large libraries.

son the letter was written to him instead of to his wife was that the wife's money was the property of the husband at that time. The letter shows there was also a daughter Mary (Molly), and a son, Saunders. Then Martin Sims, who died in Franklin County, Georgia, in 1823, leaving a will dated April 7, 1822¹⁴ may also have been a son of Elisha, Senior. A Granville marriage bond shows that Martin Sims had married Anna Howard on January 20, 1782, and Martin Sims' will in Franklin County, Georgia, shows that he had an only son named Julius. So Martin Sims evidently married a daughter of Julius Howard; and he was the son of either William or Elisha Sims, because the will of Leonard, the third son of John Sims and Sarah Bullock, probated in Warren County, lists his children and names no son Martin.¹⁵

The letter from Elisha, Jr., to David Royster was as follows:

"Franklin County, Tennessee
December 3rd 1832.

"Mr. David Royster. I received your letter by the hand of Mr. Rand, and I paid him for you, Three Hundred and Twenty Dollars. That is as near your part as I can guess, for Herbert and Zachariah have not rendered in their schedule the amount of the sale; and what I recovered in the law suit amounted to

¹⁴ Historical Collections of Georgia Chapters of Daughters of the Am. Revolution, p. 325 (in all libraries).

¹⁵ Martin Sims was in Franklin County, Georgia, as early as 1802. See Historical Collection of Georgia Chapters of Daughters of the American Revolution, p. 288; and Julius Howard and wife Susanna in 1791. *Idem*, p. 290. Martin's will says that he left ten children. In 1814 his widow, Anna Jane, died, and the "heirs of her body" are named in the court settlement of her estate, July 28, 1814. The list given is, Anna J., Hope Hall, of Franklin, Richard Sims of Greene County, Alabama, James Debow, William Reed, Elisha and Agnes. The men were clearly husbands of daughters. The record is in the same volume of Historical Collections of Georgia, p. 336. The same record shows that Elisha Sims married the above Agnes. Whose son that Elisha was, and whose son that Richard Sims was, we have no way of knowing.

\$3,170 Dollars and some cents. I had to make a sacrifice of 235 Dollars on my own responsibility to the Administrators of Sanders from carrying the case up to the Supreme Court, for my lawyers said I would lose it if I carried it up to that Court.

"I thought and do still think that I..... for the best and that every one of the legatees will lose their part of the 235 Dollars. You can write me whether you will or not. All that I have seen say they are willing to lose their part as they think that I done it for the best. We are all well, thanks be to Almighty God. The Cholera has been very bad this summer in parts of this state. There has not been any in the County that we live in. I was in Wilson this fall and saw Uncle Thomas Sims and Aunt Molly. They are as well as could be expected.

"Uncle Thomas is hearty but cannot walk. Matthias Sims lost his wife last Spring and is married again.

"Aunt Molly Wilson died last summer. Aunt Mahale Williams and her eldest daught Sarah died last summer with cholera.

"Julius Sims and family are well. I heard from William Wortham a few weeks ago & they were as well as common. He still continues to have fits. He has had them for 8 or 9 years.

"Cotton crops were injured by the frost in October. Corn crops are only tollerable; pork is from 4 to 5 dollars per hundred. Cotton and Corn sells for \$1.50.

"You stated in your letter that you wanted to know whether.....White was counted a man of counted as one of the great men of the nation, and not only as a man but more honest than any of the great men that are spoken of at present.

"I wish you to write me word whether when you get the money. Nothing more.

Very respectfully,

• "Elisha Sims."

"Direction:

Winchester Dec. 8 25
Tenn.

"Mr. David Royster Raleigh Wake County North
Carolina"

Elisha Sims, Sr., acquired a good deal of land in Warren County, North Carolina, after the 230 acres he acquired from Julius Howard (*supra*). On July 21, 1789, he acquired 400 acres, Book 11, p. 46. This deed was witnessed by L. Saunders Sims. He also received from the State a grant of 539 acres on October 9, 1783, Book 8, p. 207, in Warren County. Then he sold on May 7, 1789, 264 1/2 acres to Wm. Eton Johnson, and in 1788 to Mary Penicks 53 1/2 acres, Book 10, p. 144, and on January 14, 1801, the 230 acres to Wm. E. Johnson, Book 18, p. 172; then on May 28, 1810, to James Bullock 19 acres, Book 19, p. 77; then lastly he conveyed to Wm. Smith of Granville County 600 acres for \$3,600, dated March 6, 1816, Book 23, p. 171; which makes the total of 1,168 acres which he had acquired.

What became of Elisha Sims, Sr., in 1816, is not proven except by tradition that he went with his son, Elisha, Jr., to Tennessee.

Elisha Sims, Jr., is first heard of in Wilson County, Tennessee, the county-seat of which is Lebanon. Elisha Sims, Jr., went later to Franklin County, Tennessee, the county-seat of which is Winchester; from which county he wrote the above letter to his brother-in-law, David Royster. The records of Wilson County and of Franklin County have been searched for the will or the administration of the estate of Elisha Sims, Sr., but nothing has been found. So it may be assumed that he died in one or the other some time before the date of the letter, December 3, 1832; and that his money and effects were divided among the children without court orders.

The will of Elisha Sims, Jr., dated August 20, 1847, was probated at Winchester in Franklin County, at the May term of Court, 1852, and is in Will Book 1, p. 298. He was married twice, first to Ann Clopton, in Wilson County, October 13, 1817.¹⁸ The wife at his death was named Elizabeth and his children, as shown by the Court proceedings, were Samuel, Ellen Coulston, Hester Ann Statum and Sarah. Samuel and Sarah were probably by the second marriage.

While Elisha, Sims, Sr., was living in North Carolina, he was listed as a sergeant in the Granville County Militia, in the Company of Captain William Williams, October 3, 1771; and he took the oath of allegiance to the State of North Carolina against King George III. See the reprint of "State Records of North Carolina," Volume 22, pp. 160, 175.

Other Sims men who took the oath were Sherwood Sims, Sherwood Sims, Jr., William Sims, Leonard Sims and Thomas Sims.

So in church affairs one "Mr. Sims," probably William, Elisha or Leonard, was a leading member in 1780, in the Nutbush Presbyterian Church, "Mr. Patillo pastor," founded by emissaries from the Philadelphia Presbytery. See Appendix to Volume 5 of "N. C. Colonial Records, pp. 1214, 1222.

The only other children of Elisha Sims, Sr., who will be discussed in this essay are Zachariah and Susan.

Zachariah Sims, who was somewhere near the middle of the list of the children of Elisha Sims, Sr., was born, according to an entry on the record page of his family bible, in the hands of the author of this essay, on July 13, 1775, in Warren County, North Carolina, of course. He was married to Sarah Smith Mitchell, as

¹⁸See "Bible Records & Marriage Bonds," Lebanon, Wilson Co., p. 439, Nashville: Cullom & McGhertner, 1933.

shown by the same bible record, on September 9, 1801, which is borne out by the record of their marriage bond in Granville County records, at Oxford,¹⁹ except that the Granville record says September 7, 1801. Her father and mother were Jacob Mitchell and Sarah Smith, daughter of Guy Smith, Sr., as shown by the family bible record of the Mitchells, also in the hands of the author of this essay. Zachariah's wife, Sarah Smith Mitchell was born February 15, 1781, and died February ----, 1826.

Zachariah's first home after his marriage was over the line in Mecklenburg, Virginia; for the college registration of at least two of his sons, James Saunders and Ferdinand, at the University of Georgia, shows that they were both born in Mecklenburg County, near Clarks-ville. But that record seems to have been furnished the College by his son's family about 1900; so it may not be accurate; for a search of the records in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, shows nothing of Zachariah Sims.

He may never have lived in Warren County, North Carolina, after his marriage; for he was in Greene County, Georgia, in 1806, when he acquired 150 acres in Greene County "on the waters of Beaver Dam Creek." Deed Book 4, p. 515, November 14, 1806. This land he conveyed by his father-in-law, Jacob Mitchell (no date), who seems to have followed him to Georgia. Deed Book EE, p. 105, of Greene County records.

He may have gone back to Mecklenburg County, Virginia, as his son Ferdinand is said to have been born there in 1809. But he recognized Greene County, Georgia, as his home on July 2, 1811, in a mortgage on three slaves to William Mitchell (who was a son of Jacob Mitchell, as shown by the bible record), Deed Book EE, p. 183, of Greene County records. And on

¹⁹The author has a certificate of the marriage record.

February 15, 1808, he had acquired for \$1,000 a lot of land in Baldwin County, reciting that he was of Greene County. See Deed Book B, p. 40, of Putnam County records.

There is a memorandum prepared about 1916, by Mrs. Sallie Southall Cotton, a collateral relative, which recites that Elisha Sims manufactured cotton cards during the War of 1812, and that his son Zachariah made the first cotton gin ever made in North Carolina, and that Zachariah was referred to "as the most ingenious man whoever lived in North Carolina."

If he made cotton gins in North Carolina, however, there is no record of it in the histories. He must have been experimenting with his own inventions. It is known that others in the South invented gins which were never patented.²⁰

That Zachariah was quite a mechanical genius, however, is proven by three Acts of the Georgia Legislature:

1. An Act approved 15 December, 1809, authorized Zachariah Simms to erect a bridge over the Oconee River, at his mills in Greene County, with toll privileges. Acts of Georgia, 1801-10, p. 568.

2. An Act approved 15 December, 1810, incorporated James Turner, Zachariah Sims and others named for the improvement of the Oconee River from the mouth of Fishing Creek up to the Big Shoals at John Burnett's, the right to last till June 1, 1830. *Idem*, pp. 612-614.

3. A Joint Resolution of the Senate and House of Georgia, December 10, 1810, on petition of Zachariah Sims, authorized the loan to him by the State of \$3,000 to be secured by a mortgage on his real estate, to enable him to put into operation a paper manufactory. *Idem*, p. 697.

²⁰See Miss Rutherford's Scrap Book, Volume 3, March, 1923.

What became of his paper manufacturing enterprise is not recorded. But by 1823, he had moved to Athens, probably to enable his two younger sons better to attend the University of Georgia, where one graduated in 1823, and another in 1825. Later he again turned to mechanics, however, for he devised a steam engine to operate a steamboat, the plans for which are in the hands of the author of this essay, and moved to Macon, Georgia, lower down on the Oconee River, to avail himself of deeper water in which to operate a boat; and he died there about 1839 or 1840, the exact date not being preserved. He was buried at Macon.

The family bible record shows that Zachariah Sims and his wife Sarah had the following children:

1. *William Henry Sims*, born September 24, 1802, who entered the United States Military Academy at West Point and graduated in 1823 or 1824. He married Jane Wolstencroft, daughter of Col. Wolstencroft, of the Academy, later retired from the Army, and practised law at Vicksburg, Mississippi. He then moved to New Orleans, and died there. They had one son, Charles, who was killed in the Confederate Navy during the War between the States, unmarried and without issue. Letters in the possession of the author of this essay prove these facts.

2. *James Saunders Sims*, born December 26, 1803. He graduated at the University of Georgia in the class of 1823, then graduated from Transylvania University, Kentucky, in medicine in 1825, then studied medicine at the University of Pennsylvania with the medical class of 1827.²¹ He practised medicine in Lexington, Georgia, successfully, and amassed considerable prop-

²¹See correspondence in July, 1919, between the author of this essay and the late Eben Jordan, then Editor of the University of Pennsylvania Alumni Catalogue.

erty. He died September 17, 1880, and is buried at Lexington, Georgia. His issue will be given later.

3. Ann D. Sims, who died young.

4. John Alexander Sims, who died young.

5. Ferdinand Sims, born July 7, 1809, graduated at the University of Georgia in the class of 1825, went first to Vicksburg, Mississippi, and then to Galveston, Texas, where he died, the year not known. His issue will be given later.

6. Sarah, born 1811, died 1837, married..... Chewning.

7. Elizabeth, born 1813, married.....Brumgard, of Vicksburg. Her issue will be given later.

8. Amanda Swepston, born March 14, 1818, married John J. Boswell, M. D., 1837, who died in 1871. They lived in Brookhaven, Mississippi, where she lived after his death fifty years and died Aug. 25, 1920, in her 103rd year. Her issue will be given later.

9. Edward Sims, who died young.

Dr. James Saunders Sims married Amanda Booker Moore, May 24, 1832, at Lexington, Georgia. She was born in 1810, date not preserved, and died November 17, 1878, and is buried beside her husband Dr. Sims in Lexington, where she lived all her life. She was the daughter of John Moore, who was born in Prince Edward County, Virginia, and moved to Lexington, Georgia, where he lived until 1838 or 1839, when he and the younger children moved to Columbus, Mississippi, in the days of the great cotton land boom. His wife was Amanda Booker, or "Nancy Booker," as she was called. They are both buried in Columbus.

John Moore was the son of Major Joseph Moore of Prince Edward County, Virginia. He was a trustee in Hampden-Sydney College, in Prince Edward County.

Nancy Booker was evidently the daughter of Hon. John Booker, of Prince Edward County, a member of the Virginia House of Delegates in 1805, and a trustee of Hampden-Sydney College in 1807. A Booker genealogy is in Volume 7, Virginia Magazine, at p. 96.

Dr. James Saunders Sims and his wife Amanda had three children, first, William Henry Sims, born July 31, 1837, then a son who died young, and then a daughter, Sarah Ann Moore Sims, born August 23, 1850.

William Henry Sims was graduated at the University of Georgia in the class of 1856, entered the Law School of Harvard University May 18, 1857, and stayed about a year,²² then read law at Athens, Georgia, in the office of Thomas Radway Revis Cobb, later General Cobb of the Confederate Army, and in 1860 settled in Columbus, Mississippi. He enlisted in the Tombigbee Rangers, 44th Mississippi Regiment, at the opening of the War Between the States, becoming 2nd Lieutenant when the war opened. He was advanced as high as lieutenant-colonel by November, 1864, at the Battle of Franklin, and there fell from a shot through the knee while commanding his regiment. Unable to escape while wounded, he was captured, held as a prisoner of war, finally being confined as a "conscious rebel" in the federal prison at Louisville, Kentucky, until released in August, 1865.

After having had his wounded left leg removed below the knee, he returned to Columbus, Mississippi, and practised law until 1893.

He was Probate Judge in Mississippi until displaced by the Reconstruction administration of the State. But in 1876, he took part in redeeming the State from that

²²See the registers of University of Georgia and Harvard respectively.

administration. He was elected State Senator, was made President of the Senate, when Military Governor Adelbert Ames abandoned his position, and James M. Stone was made Governor by the Legislature, having been selected over Sims by only one vote.²³ Governor Stone and Lieutenant-Governor Sims were reelected in 1878, for a term ending 1882, when Stone continued as governor another four years, but Sims returned to the practice of law at Columbus, Mississippi.

William Henry Sims was a trustee of Mississippi State College for Women in Columbus from its formation to 1892. He then served as First Assistant Secretary of the Interior in the second Cleveland Administration, 1893 to 1897, and then moved to Birmingham, Alabama, where he lived in retirement until his death there, February 20, 1920. He is buried in Birmingham. For a fuller statement of his career see Volume 10 of *National Cyclopaedia of American Biography*, and also a recent volume published in 1939, in New York, and Vol. 7 of *Confederate Military History*, published in Atlanta in 1899.

August 11, 1870, William Henry Sims married Elizabeth Louisa Upson, at Lexington, Georgia. She was born August 23, 1837, the only child of Francis Lewis Upson and Sarah Serena McKinley. Francis L. Upson entered the University of Georgia with the class of 1829, but after a fire which damaged the College greatly, went to Union College at Schenectady, New York, and graduated there with Phi Beta Kappa in 1832.²⁴ Francis L. Upson was the oldest son of Stephen Upson, born in Connecticut, graduated at Yale College in 1804,²⁵ moved to Lexington, Georgia, where he practised law

²³This was reported to the author by the late Judge J. W. Houston of Mississippi, who learned it from his father, a member of the Mississippi Legislature at the time.

²⁴His diploma is in the possession of the author of this essay.

²⁵His diploma also is in the possession of the author.

until his death in 1824. Stephen Upson was a trustee of the University of Georgia from 1811 until his death.²⁶

Francis L. Upson and his wife Sarah Serena McKinley were first cousins, their mothers both being daughters of Rev. Francis Cummins, D.D., who fought in the American Revolution as a private soldier, although already a Presbyterian minister. He had been present in the crowd which endorsed the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence when proclaimed in Charlotte in May, 1775, and in a certificate calls himself "an agent," meaning a partaker in that event, having been a student in Queens College then at Charlotte. See State Pamphlet 1831, including his "certificate of facts," written by him from Lexington, Georgia, in 1819, printed in Volume II of the History of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, by D. A. Thompson, p. 19.

Mrs. Louisa Upson Sims was graduated from Spingler Institute, New York, in 1855. She was the first State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution in Mississippi, having taken part in organizing the institution in that State. She died July 21, 1913, at Birmingham, Alabama, and is buried there.

Henry Upson Sims, the author of this essay and the only child of William Henry Sims and Elizabeth Louisa Upson was born June 27, 1873, at Columbus, Mississippi; educated at the University of Virginia (B.A., 1894), and at Harvard University (LL.B., 1897); and settled in Birmingham, Alabama, in 1898, where he has practised law ever since. For his career see the Volumes of "Who's Who in America" from 1930 on.²⁷

Henry Upson Sims married on October 25, 1910, at Birmingham, Alice Pinckney Graham, daughter of

²⁶See the record of the University of Georgia.

²⁷The A. N. Marquis Company, Chicago, published every two years.

John Franklin Graham, of Birmingham, and his wife, Ella Mitchell Graham. Her father was Benjamin Pinckney Worthington, whose plantation covered much of the present site of Birmingham. For his genealogy, see the "Worthington Family of Virginia, South Carolina and Alabama" written by the author of this essay.

Alice Graham Sims was graduated from Goucher College in the class of 1904. She has served as President of the College Club of Birmingham, President of the Cadmean Circle, President of the Red Mountain Garden Club, President of the Linley Heflin Unit (at present a charitable organization, but founded during the World War by her sister for war work), President of the Children's Hospital of Birmingham, and has been active in other civic work for many years.

She is a member of the National Society of Colonial Dames of America as a descendant of John Symcock, president of Wm. Penn's Council, and is a Daughter of the American Revolution.

Henry Upson Sims and Alice Graham Sims have but one child, Henry Graham Sims, of Birmingham, born March 5, 1915.

Sarah A. Mitchell Sims, daughter of Dr. James Saunders Sims and Amanda Booker Moore, was born August 23, 1850, and married at Lexington, Georgia, Rev. John B. Morton, a Presbyterian minister. They lived at various places in Georgia, North Carolina, and Virginia, where he had charge of churches; and after his retirement moved to Seattle, Washington, where he died in 1916(?) and she died in 1928, and where they both are buried. They had two children, Lillia Lynn Morton, born October 15, 1877, graduated at Goucher College, 1901, and Rev. Ernest S. Morton, born April 26, 1880, graduated from Davidson College, North Carolina, and from Northwestern University, Chicago, School of Divinity.

They have both spent much of their lives as missionaries in Japan. Returning to America in 1920, they have lived at Seattle, he having various charges as a Presbyterian minister. Neither he nor she has ever married.

Ferdinand Sims, fifth child of Zachariah Sims and Sarah Mitchell, was born July 7, 1809, married Sarah McNutt, of Vicksburg, Mississippi, whither he moved after graduating at the University of Georgia.

They had three children, (1) Laura, born September 11, 1838, in Vicksburg (as shown by the Zachariah Sims bible sheets in the hands of the author), and on information of other members of the family, (2) Smith, who died unmarried, and (3) Eugenia, who married ----- Clifton, of Galveston, and of whom nothing is known. Ferdinand Sims and his wife moved from Vicksburg to Galveston before 1858.

Laura Sims married Henry de Veuve, July 7, 1857, as shown by the same bible sheets, which also show that Henry de Veuve, born July 26, 1831, in West Feliciana Parish, Louisiana, was the eldest son of Daniel de Veuve, of Neufchatel, Switzerland (now France), and Julia Prentiss.

The bible also shows two sons born to them in Galveston, (1) Henry Potter de Veuve, March 23, 1858, and (2) Prentiss de Veuve, born December 15, 1859.

Henry de Veuve and his wife, Laura Sims, moved to San Francisco at the close of the War Between the States.

Clarence de Veuve, of San Francisco, reports to the author of this essay that his father and mother, Henry de Veuve and Laura Sims, also had (3) James N., (4) Julia Eugenia, and (5) Clarence, who gave the following data as to their children in 1925:

1. Henry P. de Veuve (dead), had Henry, Arthur and Alice, and his son Henry died in 1925, leaving one child named Henry, then about seven years old.

2. Prentiss had two daughters, Laura and Margerie, each over 21 years old, and unmarried.

3. James H. had a daughter.

4. Julia Eugenia married Capt. F. G. Dodge of the U. S. Navy, and lives in Seattle. They had two sons in 1925, Frederick, and Lawrence, and one daughter, Julia.

5. Clarence de Veuve married Ida B. Peterson, of San Francisco; and they have three children, (1) Dorothy married Commander Oswalk, U. S. N., (2) Clarence Sims, 12 in 1925, since graduated from Stanford University, and (3) James Prentiss, 4 in 1925. Clarence de Veuve has a very large insurance business in San Francisco.

Elizabeth Sims, seventh child of Zachariah Sims and Sarah Mitchell, married _____ Brumgard of Vicksburg, Mississippi. She had three sons, all of whom died unmarried, and a daughter, Ada, who married George E. Woelper, of New Orleans. They had one daughter, Estelle, born September 11, 1882, who married Luther S. Sexton, now deceased. She had two children, Carolina Estelle, born 1908, and Luther S. Sexton, Jr., born September 16, 1916.

Amanda Swepton Sims, eighth child of Zachariah Sims and Sarah Mitchell, was born March 14, 1818, at Athens, Georgia, and married Dr. John Jay Boswell, June 5, 1837, who was born in Brunswick County, Virginia, May 28th, 1804. They lived in Columbus, Georgia, where Dr. Boswell practised medicine until the War Between the States, and where all their ten children were born. After the war they moved to Brookhaven, Mississippi, where Dr. Boswell continued his profession until his death October 30, 1871. She lived nearly fifty years after his death, and died at Brookhaven on August 25, 1920, at the age of 102 years. She was blind from cataract in both her eyes throughout the last

twenty years of her life; having decided at the age of eighty that she was too old to submit to an operation.

Amanda Swepston Sims and her husband, Dr. Boswell, had ten children, those reaching maturity being,

(1) Ella, born May 22, 1839, died January, 1902;

(2) John Jay, born December 9, 1842, married Rosa Lea, November 20, 1874, by whom he had eight children, and died at Dallas, Texas, in 1918;

(3) Susan Ann, born October 25, 1847, married J. W. Sankey, July 15, 1874, by whom she had seven children, and died at Hatchechubbee, Alabama, -----;

(4) Virginia Lee, born April 16, 1853, married William Dodds Terry, July 12, 1876, by whom she had two children, and died August 30, 1881, at Crystal Springs, Mississippi;

(5) Leonora Lightner, born October 10, 1855, married the above William Dodds Terry, November 15, 1882, the widower of her sister Virginia Lee, last above named, by whom she also had two children, and died at Hattiesburg, Mississippi, September 18, 1930;

(6) Adah, born October 9, 1858, and died at New Orleans, February 6, 1896.

The children of Virginia Lee Boswell and William Dodds Terry were a son, Boswell Conway, born June 3, 1877, who died young, and Carrie Burnet, born August 5, 1879, who married September 11, 1920, Thomas Caleb Hannah, a lawyer with large business connections. They live in Hattiesburg, Mississippi. Mrs. Hannah is a Colonial Dame.

The children of Leonora Lightner Boswell and William Dodds Terry were Robert Cunningham Terry, born July 7, 1885, and a son who died at once.

William Dodds Terry was born September 6, 1850, and died February 25, 1926, in Simpson County, Mississippi.

All the above data were furnished by Mrs. Carrie Hannah from bible entries in the Boswell bible and other family records.

Robert C. Terry married November 7, 1907, at Yazoo City, Mississippi, Mary Catherine Schweikert, third daughter of Joseph Schweikert, a planter of Holmes County, Mississippi, who owned three large plantations, embracing several thousand acres along the Yazoo River and named respectively, "Silent Shade," "Dexter," and "May Day."

Robert C. Terry was a cotton planter and cotton buyer. He lived at Leland, Mississippi, and died October 30, 1939. He and his wife, Mary Catherine, had three children (1) Leonora Caroline, born August 5, 1908, married May 21, 1933, to John William Weilenman a planter of Stoneville, Washington County, Mississippi, (2) Mary Amanda, who died young, (3) Robert Joseph, born September 24, 1916, graduated at Davidson College, 1938, and engaged in life insurance business at High Point, North Carolina.

Susan Sims, the daughter of Zachariah Sims and Anna or Sarah Howard, was born in 1779 in Warren County, North Carolina, according to records of the Royster descendants. That Susan was the daughter of Elisha Sims is proven, (1) by the memoir issued at her death (See Appendix V of this essay), (2) by the letter written to David Royster by Elisha Sims, Jr., in 1832 (*supra*), (3) by an entry in a bible in the possession of Mrs. V. C. Royster of Raleigh being that of her mother Amanda M. Royster, published in 1850, that "Amanda M. Royster was born 20th September, 1826, in Raleigh, No. Ca., daughter of David Royster and Susan A., his wife, who was the daughter of E. Simms."²⁸ (4) It is also said that the tombstone of Susan Royster,

²⁸A copy of this entry was given the author of this essay by Mrs. Zebulon Judd, of Auburn, Ala., who copied it from the bible.

in a graveyard in Raleigh, states that she was the daughter of Elisha Sims.

Susan Sims married David Royster in 1802, who was born in Granville County, January 11, 1775, the son of David Royster and Mary Daniel of Granville and grandson of Jacob Royster of Mecklenburg County, Virginia.

Their children reaching maturity were:

1. *William Howard*, born 1803, died Sept. 7, 1845, married Mary Stephens, died May 31, 1880.
2. Sarah Saunders, married James Murray.
3. James Daniel, married Mary Ashley.
4. Madison Bullock, married (1) Martha Terry, (2) Panthea Burt.
5. Leonard Henderson, married Jane Carmault.
6. Irene Nichols, married Thomas Steele.
7. Adaline, married Wm. C. Upchurch.
8. Mary Daniel, married Alsey J. Crocker.
9. David, married Sarah Womble.
10. Amanda Malvina Fitzallen, born Sept., 1826, married William Henderson High.

Their oldest child, *William Howard Royster* and his wife, Mary Stephens, had six children to reach maturity, Susan, David, Sarah Saunders, Leonard Henderson, ----- William Burt, and Mary Howard.

William Burt Royster, born February 9, 1843, in Raleigh, married October 6, 1869, in Columbia, South Carolina, Julia E. Tutt, daughter of Wm. H. Tutt, of Columbia, S. C.; and died April 15, 1917.

The children of Wm. Burt Royster and Julia E. Tutt are (1) Edith Isabelle, born August 25, 1873, in Columbia, S. C., married December 27, 1915, in Raleigh, Zebulon Judd, son of John Thomas Judd of Wake County,

N. C., (2) Frances Brooks Royster and (3) Juliana A. Royster.

Edith Royster Judd, Mrs. Zebulon Judd, has been active in educational and civic affairs for many years, both in Raleigh before their marriage, and in Alabama since her marriage to Dr. Zebulon Judd. She was on the Executive Committee of North Carolina Teachers Assembly 1910-11, Vice-President State Library and Historical Society 1910-11, President State Primary Teachers Association 2 years, President Wake County School Betterment Association 13 years. In Alabama, she was President Alabama School Improvement Association 1916-18, State Chairman of American Citizenship of Alabama State Federation of Women's Clubs 2 years, a member of the Committee of National Advisory Commission on Illiteracy 1 year, State Regent Alabama Daughters of the American Revolution 1931-4, Honorary Life State Regent Alabama D.A.R., Vice-President General National Society D.A.R. 1935-38. She is also a Colonial Dame.

She was educated at Winthrop College, at the University of North Carolina and at Columbia University.

Dr. Zebulon Judd is Dean of the Educational School at Alabama Politechnic School at Auburn, Alabama.

Amanda Royster, the tenth child of Susan Sims and David Royster, married William Henderson High, March 20, 1849, and was the mother of Hallie High, the lady who holds the letter from Joseph J. Allen and that from Elisha Sims, Jr., set out above, and the memorial of Susan Royster set out in Appendix V. She lives in Raleigh, and is over eighty years old. Her husband, now dead, V. C. Royster, was the great-grandson of Susan Sims Royster, being the grandson of her third child, listed above, James Daniel Royster.

Léonard Sims of Warren County was the third son of John Sims and Sarah Bullock, and was made execu-

tor of his father's will in Granville County. The will, as we have seen, was not recorded although it was filed in Court. There was an order of the "Inferior Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions, held at Oxford, May 5, 1767" directing Leonard Sims, surviving executor, to make an appraisal of the personalty of the testator and its division according to the will. The author of this essay has a copy of the order. As the widow, Sarah Sims, was made co-executor with Leonard under the will the word "surviving executor" applied to Leonard, shows that his mother was dead when the order was made.

The will of John Sims mentions ten children and Leonard is mentioned after the daughters; but as he was executor and of course more than twenty-one at his father's death, we can assume that he was older than some of the daughters. Mrs. Judd says that a "bible of John Sims, oldest brother of Susan Sims Burt, in possession of Mrs. Mary Sankey," contains the entry "Leonard Sims, my father, was born July 2, 1739, and died August, 1814." But this statement is clearly wrong as to his death, because Will Book 13, p. 1, of Warren County Records at Warrenton, North Carolina, shows that the will was proved at the November Court in 1804, not 1814. So the birth date may be wrong also. We have assumed (p. 154, *supra*) that Elisha was born about 1738. So Leonard was born probably in 1740.

Leonard did not marry until March 12, 1770, as shown by his marriage bond at Boydton, in Mecklenburg County, Virginia.²⁹ His wife, Sarah Swepson, was the daughter of Richard Swepson; for Richard Swepson's will dated May 4, 1787, probated in Meck-

²⁹A Letter from the Clerk of Mecklenburg County to the author of this essay, giving the fact of the marriage bond of Leonard Sims and Sarah Swepson. The Clerk's letter is dated Sept. 28, 1926.

lenburg County, January 11, 1778, refers to his daughter, Sarah Sims, and names his son Richard Swepson and his sons-in-law, Alexander Boyd and Leonard Sims, his executors.³⁰ Leonard Sims served with the North Carolina troops in the American Revolution, as shown by a certificate in the possession of the author of this essay. Leonard Sims acquired his first land in Warren County, except the land he acquired from his father on his father's death in 1765, by a purchase from his brother, William Sims, February 7, 1787, 100 acres (Book 9, folio 95, Warren County). But he acquired more land in 1791 (Book 12, p. 41), and again 99 1/4 acres from his brother William in 1795 (Book 13, p. 289), and an acreage not mentioned from one Phefer, the same year (Book 14, p. 86).

In Book 17, p. 225, is the record of a division of Leonard Sims' lands among three of his sons. Lot 1, 400 acres, went to Henry Sims, Lot 2, 500 acres, went to Thomas Sims and Lot 3, 431 acres, went to Joseph Sims. Leonard Sims' will was dated 1795, but there was a codicil dated 1804. The will is quite long and is in Will Book 13, p. 1, of Warren County records. It names his wife, Sarah Sims, sister Susanna Sims and children John, Swepson "Len Hendley," Jane Jeffers (revealed by other records to have married Langley), Sarah, Thomas, Joe and Henry.

The inventory, in Book 13, p. 1, and Book 16, pp. 281-3, shows that his personal property amounted to 1,175 pounds in value.

The list of children of Leonard which is current among his descendants, as revealed by a memorandum prepared in 1916, by his granddaughter, Mrs. Sallie Southall Cotten, now dead and furnished to the author of this essay by her son, Bruce Cotten, Esq., of Balti-

³⁰Reported in the Clerk's letter.

more in 1936, is inaccurate in including Susanna who married David Royster, as a child of Leonard; whereas we have seen that Susanna (Susan) was a daughter of Elisha.³¹

What became of all these children of Leonard Sims has not been traced. John was probably the John Sims who received a grant of 370 acres on Elk River in Tennessee, shown in Book R, p. 318, dated 7/20, 1821, in the Archives Division of the State Library at Nashville; and Leonard H. Sims was probably the Leonard H. Sims who married Elizabeth Washington on September 22, 1816, in Wilson County, Tennessee.³²

Mrs. Cotten gives her descent from Swepson (or Richard Swepson) set out below. He, rather than John, must have been the oldest; for his birth is given by Mrs. Cotten as May 4, 1771, and we have seen that Leonard Sims and Sarah Swepson married on March 12, 1770, as shown by their marriage bond.

Dr. Richard Swepson Sims married March 6, 1799, Rebecca Dromgoole of Brunswick County, Virginia, who was not quite 16 at their marriage. They lived in Brunswick County, where Dr. Sims attained eminence in the practice of medicine, living until August 8, 1859.

Their children were,

1. Sallie Swepson, born 1800, died young.
2. Elizabeth Dromgoole, born 1801, married Jones.
3. Alexander Dromgoole Sims, born June 12, 1803, moved to Darlington, South Carolina, practised law, and was a Member of Congress (1845-48), when he died.

³¹Mrs. Cotten also lists Jane Jeffers as two, whereas it was the double name of Jane Jeffers Langley. Leonard Sims left eight children, not ten, as Mrs. Cotten says.

³²James Saunders in his *Memoirs of Alabama*, says Leonard H. Sims was a brother of Zachariah; but that is probably wrong.

4. Edward Dromgoole Sims, born March 24, 1805. He married first Grace Andrews, second Annie Andrews, sisters. They were both daughters of the Andrews who wrote the Andrews and Stoddard's Latin Grammar, which was in universal use when first published. Edward Dromgoole Sims was a minister and a teacher. He graduated at the University of North Carolina. In 1836 he went to Europe and studied Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Arabic and Syriac for two years at Halle, after which he traveled over Europe for two years. He then became a professor at Randolph-Macon College. Later he became a professor at the University of Alabama, where he died April 12, 1845. He left one child, Grace Sims, who married Gen. Pope of the Confederate Army. They lived in Milledgeville, Georgia.

5. Rebecca Walton, born 1807.

6. Mary Jane, born 1809.

7. Susanna Swepson, born February 26, 1814.

8. Richard Swepson, born March 13, 1816, died May 7, 1871.

Also two more daughters who died young.

Susanna Swepson Sims, seventh child as shown above married Thomas James Southall, September 15, 1831, and died November 9, 1872.

They had seven children, the fifth being Mrs. Hallie Southall Cotten, who married Robert Randolph Cotten, April 14, 1866. Bruce Cotten, Esq., of Baltimore, is their son.

CHAPTER XIV.

DESCENDANTS OF THE CHILDREN OF JOHN SIMS, SR., AND
MARY RICE (CONTINUED.)II. *Micajah Sims and His Descendants.*

Micajah Sims, the second or third son of John Sims, Sr., and Mary Rice, was probably born in Hanover County, Virginia, about 1720. As the name Michajah appears as a Rice name in one or more of the surviving Hanover County Records, he was probably named for one of his mother's brothers or uncles.

Whom Micajah Sims married is not known; and only a few deed records in Louisa County, referred to on pages 110 and 111, *supra*, constitute our record knowledge of him. But his descendant, Lucien Mortimer Sims, Esq., of Louisa, Virginia, has family data covering most of Micajah Sims' descendants. So Mr. L. M. Sims' chart is here set out entire. Mr. L. M. Sims seems to be the only descendant of any of the original Sims brothers, bearing the name of Sims, who still lives in Hanover or Louisa County. His cousin, Mrs. L. A. Sims Hardin, lives on a portion of the original Sims grant of 3,000 acres at Beaver Dam, Virginia, near the dividing line of Hanover and Louisa Counties.

Micajah Sims, Sr., had four sons, (1) John, (2) Micajah, Jr., (3) Benjamin, and (4) David, and two daughters, Massie and Elizabeth.

1. *John Sims*, the first, married *Elizabeth Lipscomb*, September 25, 1795.

2. *Micajah, Junior*, married *Philadelphia Peers*, June 17, 1787.

3. *Benjamin* married *Lucy Lipscomb*, August 16, 1788.

4. *David*, died 1811.

John Sims, the first, and Elizabeth Lipscomb, had sons, (1a) John Lipscomb, (2a) James, and (3a) Hezekiah.

(1a) John Lipscomb Sims, married Louisa Anna Caroline Mills, January 18, 1834.

(2a) James, married Elizabeth Walton.

(3a) Hezekiah, married Mary Perkins.

(1a) John Lipscomb Sims and Louisa Anna Caroline Mills, had sons, (1b) Charles (who died without issue), (2b) Lucien, (3b) Benjamin, (4b) Peter (who died without issue) (5b) Mortimer, and one daughter, Elizabeth (who died without issue).

(2b) Lucien married Patsy Swift, and had a daughter, (1c) Louisa Anstess, who married Littleton Hardin (1900) and had a son, Littleton Hardin, Jr., born 1906, and a daughter, Elizabeth. Mrs. Hardin still lives on the original "Sims Grant," with her post office at Beaver Dam.

(3b) Benjamin, married Virginia Swift, 1870, and had sons, (1c) Versal Aubrey, (2c) Asa Higgason, (3c) Reuben Mills, (4c) Alfred Elmore, (5c) Lucien Mortimer, and daughters, Mary Moseley, Cordelia Carolina, Adelaide Brown, Bennie Virginia, and Ola Bernice.

(3c) Reuben Mills married Blanch Hanna, 1918, and has two sons, Benjamin Oscar, and Paul, and two daughters, Mary and Dee.

(4c) Alfred Elmore married Grace Firebaugh (1922), and has sons, Harold, Ralph, and Earl, and one daughter.

(5c) Lucien Mortimer Sims, who is the last descendant of the original Sims family living in Louisa County bearing the Sims name, married Nellie O. Carpenter, 5/29/1931, daughter of John William Carpenter

and Bernice Good, natives of Madison County, Virginia, now Orange County, Virginia, and has three children, Virginia Bernice, born March 7, 1932, Nellie Jean, born August 16, 1933, and Welford Mortimer, born December 24, 1936.

(3a) *Hezekiah Sims and Mary Perkins* had a son, Dr. Frederick Hezekiah, who married Maria Louise Kimbrough, and had two sons, one being the late Frederick Wilmer Sims of the Supreme Court of Appeals of Virginia, and two daughters.

(2) *Micajah Sims, Junior, and Philadelphia Peers*, had four sons, Monroe, Meriwether Selden, Allen, and Chapman, and a daughter Catherine.

(3) *Benjamin Sims and Lucy Lipscomb* had sons, John Brimmer and Garland.

John Brimmer had a son Newell.

Frederick Wilmer Sims was born July 23, 1863, in the height of the War Between the States, and throughout the Reconstruction he had to work hard for an education. But he was educated at the University of Virginia, chiefly in Latin, Greek, Mathematics, and English Literature, leaving college on his father's death. He was admitted to the bar in 1885, and was Judge of the Louisa County Court from 1891 to 1894. He was in the State Senate in 1905. In 1917 he was elected to the Supreme Court of Appeals of Virginia, and February 1, 1924, was elected President of the Court, or Chief Justice, holding that position at his death February 8, 1925. He married September 14, 1888, Lucy Payne Winston, daughter of Col. William A. Winston and Lucy Payne, of Louisa County. He left a daughter Maria (now dead), who married W. Worth Smith, and had one daughter, Frederica Maria.¹

¹Taken from the address of Wm. C. Bibb, on presenting Judge Sims' portrait to the Court, March 2, 1937.

CHAPTER XV.

DESCENDANTS OF THE CHILDREN OF JOHN SIMS, SR., AND
MARY RICE (CONTINUED).III. *Sherwood Sims and His Descendants.*

Sherwood Sims, believed to have been the youngest, or near the youngest son of John Sims, Sr., and Mary Rice (See Chapter VIII, *supra*) was born, according to the statement of Dr. James Marion Sims, his descendant, quoted in his autobiography,¹ in 1730, and died in 1825. Dr. Sims writes that he remembers him as a very old man. He was at the defeat of General Braddock in 1755, according to Dr. Sims. Where he was from that time until 1788 is not discoverable. There is no preserved record of any transaction by him in Hanover County, nor in Louisa County.

But for Dr. Sims' statement that he lived until 1825, we would assume that he was the *Sherwood Sims* who lived in Warren County, prior to 1789.² But that *Sherwood Sims* died and left a will to be found in Book 5, p. 151, of Warren County records, probated in 1792, naming sons, *Sherwood*, *Matthias* and *Thomas*, and daughters, *Betty Watkins*, *Mary Kee* and *Fanny Sims*. Dr. Sims' memory seems too clear, however, that his great-grandfather was at Braddock's defeat for his great-grandfather to have been the *Sherwood* who was the son of *Sherwood* who died in 1792.

Dr. Sims' great-grandfather appears first in the records of Lancaster County, South Carolina, in 1788, when he acquired a tract of 250 acres on Beaver Creek in Lancaster County, dated February 28, 1788, and of record in Volume A, p. 222, of Lancaster County records. He took title as *Sherod Sims*; but the word *Sherod* is clearly

¹"The Story of My Life," by James Marion Sims, New York, D. Appleton & Company, 1884.

²See p. 135, *supra*.

a corruption of Sherwood. The names are too similar not to have been the same. The only question is whether Dr. Sims' statement is correct; so that his great-grandfather was the son of John Sims and Mary Rice, or whether Dr. Sims was incorrect, and his great-grandfather was the Sherwood, Jr., named in the will of the Sherwood who died in 1789 in Warren County, and who was the son of John Sims and Mary Rice, and who may well have been at Braddock's defeat. We have accepted Dr. Sims' statement, and have classed the Sherwood of Warren County who died in 1789, as the son of Edward Sims, Sr., or Matthew Sims, Sr., or of James Sims.³ But Dr. Sims was only twelve years old when his great-grandfather died in 1825, and a child's memory often confuses generations.

Toy R. Gregory, Esq., of the Lancaster, South Carolina, bar, made a search of the records of Lancaster County, in 1931, as a curtesy to the author of this essay, and writes that there was a custom in the early days in that County for both parties to a deed of conveyance to have one or more of their respective families to witness the execution of their deeds.

Applying this custom, an Ellet Sims witnessed the deed to Sherod in 1788 for 250 acres, and was therefore a son. An Ashbourn Sims acquired property in 1790, Volume C, p. 104, the deed being witnessed by William Sims and James Sims; and as Sherod sold land to Ashbourn Sims in 1816, as shown by the index, although the record is destroyed, Mr. Gregory concludes that Ashbourn was another son of Sherod, and that William and James Sims were sons of Ashbourn.

An Edward Sims, with Jane, his wife, conveyed land on November 16, 1791, Volume B, p. 279, and Mr. Gregory concludes that Edward was a son of Sherod;

³See p. 135, *supra*, and p. 141, *supra*.

a Sherod Sims, Jr., acquired land on February 17, 1817, Volume L, p. 147; and of course he was a son of Sherod; and a Stephen Sims witnessed this deed, and Mr. Gregory concludes that Stephen was a son of Sherod.

A George Sims acquired land on September 17, 1817, Volume K, p. 105, and Ervin Sims witnessed the deed; and Mr. Gregory concludes that Ervin Sims was a son of Sherod, and that George was Ervin's son. By the rule, however, George was more likely a son of Sherod and Ervin was George's son. Ervin first acquired land on January 7, 1820, Volume K, p. 87—100 acres; which would seem too late for him to have been Sherod's son. But Ervin acquired more land on January 9, 1824, Volume M, pp. 535-6, and Sherod (supposed to be the old man) acted as a witness for him; unless this was Sherod, Jr.

At any rate, Mr. Gregory concludes from the deeds, not all of which are cited above, that Ervin Sims was the sixth son of Sherod, Sr., that Ervin had four sons, George, Garret, John, John J. (not the same), and two daughters, Amanda and Margaret, and that J. Marion Sims, who was a witness for John Sims to a deed given by John Sims to town property on September 13, 1834, Volume N, p. 16, was the son of John Sims.

Dr. Sims says: "I was born in Lancaster County, South Carolina, the 25th of January, 1813, about ten miles south of the village of Lancaster * * * The ancestors of my father, John Sims, were the English colonists of Virginia. My mother, Mahala Mackey, was the daughter of Charles and Lydia Mackey, of Scotch-Irish origin. The family [his mother's] came to America about 1740. My paternal great-grandfather, Sherod Sims, was born in Virginia, 1730. I remember the date well, because he told me he was at Braddock's defeat (1755), and that he was then twenty-five years old. He served through the Revolutionary War, and afterward

removed from Virginia with his family to the Beaver Creek neighborhood, in the southern part of Lancaster County, South Carolina."⁴ He then says that Sherod Sims died of old age in 1825 at the age of ninety-five, having survived his wife twenty-five years. His wife's name is not given.

Dr. Sims mentions three of his great-grandfather's sons—Sherod, Stephen and Ashbourn, but does not give the others.

His father, John Sims, he says was born December 27, 1790, and married Mahala Mackey April 19, 1812.

He says that his father did not have a day's schooling until over twenty-three years old, and then had but six months. And yet "he became an accomplished accountant and bookkeeper, and wrote a beautiful hand." He was Sheriff of Lancaster County from 1830 to 1834, served in the War of 1812, becoming captain of his company, and after the War was colonel of the Lancaster Militia. He was a great fox hunter, and a great quail shooter, and an excellent billiard player. He died in July, 1867, at the age of seventy-eight from riding thirty miles on his horse in the heat of the day.

His wife, Dr. Sims' mother, died at the age of forty of bilious fever.⁵

Dr. Sims attended South Carolina College, now the University of South Carolina, graduating in December, 1832. Then over his father's opposition (who wanted his son to be a lawyer) he went to the Charleston Medical School, and after a few months entered Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia, graduating March 1, 1835.

He married December 1, 1836, Theresa Jones, daughter of Dr. Jones of Lancaster, where he first began practising. But he soon moved to Alabama, and

⁴"The Story of My Life," p. 32.

⁵Idem, p. 34.

practised medicine and surgery at Mt. Meigs, in Montgomery County, then in Macon County, Alabama. Then in 1840, he moved to the town of Montgomery, where he made his great medico-surgical experiments and discoveries in finding a simple way to cure distressing internal disorders of women. He established his own hospital and successfully treated supposedly incurable slave mothers at his own expense.

In January, 1852, he published the report of his work in the *American Journal of the Medical Sciences*; and in 1853 moved to New York; where after several years of failure to receive recognition, the Woman's Hospital of New York was founded, the first hospital in the world for the exclusive treatment of diseases of women.

In 1861, he went abroad, and operated in Ireland, Scotland, England, France, and Belgium, and lived in Paris much of the remainder of his life. He died in 1883.

A bronze portrait bust of Dr. Sims stands as the chief decoration of the park back of the New York Public Library; and in 1939, a heroic sized statue of him was erected by the Medical Society of Alabama on the Capitol grounds at Montgomery. Dr. M. Y. Dabney, of Birmingham, in closing an address at the unveiling of the statute in Montgomery, said of him:

"Wherever he went he commanded the greatest respect, for he was the ranking gynecologist of his age and truly the father of modern gynecology.

"The amount of suffering relieved by Sims' impetus to gynecology cannot be considered as applying merely to his time or ours; but should be multiplied by the number of ill and distressed women yet to be born in the ages to come."

The Lancaster County records show that Dr. Sims had at least one brother, C. W. Sims; as a deed from

C. W. Sims, in Volume N, p. 385, of Lancaster records, recites that the grantor's father was John, and his mother Mahala; and Dr. Sims' autobiography refers to his brother Charles, who was younger.

That Dr. Sims' father, John Sims, whose wife was Mahala Mackey, had a brother named John J. Sims is clear from a deed in Volume Q, p. 445, of Lancaster records, dated September 27, 1853, in which Mary Sims refers to her mother, Agnes Sims, the wife of John J. Sims. Agnes was evidently the daughter of Thomas Mackey. Thomas M. Sims and Andrew J. Sims, evidently Mary's brothers, seem to have joined Mary in the deed, or to have made another deed to the same grantee on the same day.

Mr. Toy R. Gregory writes that J. F. Sims, of Hardin County, Texas, informs him that he was the son of Thomas M. Sims, and that his father and Dr. Sims were first cousins.

Dr. James Marion Sims left sons who died without issue, as the author is informed. He also left daughters; but they have not been traced.

APPENDIX I.

THE ORIGINAL BILL, THE "FURTHER ANSWER" OF THE EXECUTRIX OF THE DEFENDANT, JOHN VERNON, JR., AFTER THE SUIT HAD BEEN REVIVED AGAINST HER, AND THE FINAL DECREE OF COURT.

These papers are preserved in the Record Office in London, and photostatic copies were furnished to Henry Upson Sims. In some places the old script is illegible, and in other places the parchment was so creased that the photograph did not take.

17th January 1704, amended by order of Ct. ye last date, 5th Jany. 1705

To the Right Hon. Nathan Wright Knighte Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of England.

Humbly complaining show unto your Lordship your orators Henry Symes and Christopher Symes infants of Henry Symes their uncle and next friend and guardian that Thomas Everard heretofore of the Island of Antigo in the West Indies, gentlemen, did several years since die seized and possessed of an interest in a plantation in North Sound and of some other very considerable real estate as also of a considerable personal estate within the said Island and that after his death the said plantation or some great part thereof descended to and became in Dorothy Everard his only child.

And your orators show that Elizabeth Everard widow and relique of the said Thomas Everard since that time to John Vernon of Antigo aforesaid esquire and that the said Dorothy by the overpersuasion of the said John Vernon and Elizabeth her mother did for a very small if any consideration assign transfer and convey all her interest in the plantation and personal formerly of the said Thomas Everard unto the said John Vernon his heirs and assigns or to some person

in trust for him and the that the said Dorothy was afterward married to Captain George Symes of the said Island. And the said John [creases prevent reading] that the assignment made by the said Dorothy of her part of the said Thomas Everard's estate was not valid for that the said Dorothy was (as the truth was) under the age when she assigned the same & often promising [illegible] into consideration the circumstances of the said George Symes and Dorothy his wife and make satisfaction to them or their children if they would ratify and make good the said assignment prevailed by such fair promises [illegible] and Dorothy his wife to make new assignment and conveyance of the said plantation and other the said estate of the said Thomas Everard and their interest therein unto the said John Vernon his heirs & assigns [creases] other person in trust for him. And your orators show that the said George Symes made his will in writing some time in the year 1687 or some other time and soon after died leaving the said Dorothy his widow your orators Henry Symes & Christopher Syms also John Symes, George Symes & Elizabeth Symes his children by the said Dorothy by which will the guardianship of the said George Symes' children was committed to the above said Henry Symes his brother Coll. Edward Byam the said John Vernon, Francis Carlisle & Joseph Clarke of Antigo aforesaid. But no one acted pursuant to the same save the said Henry Symes. And your orators farther show unto your Lordship that the said Dorothy and her said children being left in a very low and mean condition and the said John Vernon calling to mind that the said Dorothy had parted with and assigned her interest in the said estate formerly of the said Thomas Everard unto the said John Vernon as aforesaid and which by due course of law after the death of the said Dorothy would have come to the

child or children of the said Dorothy in pursuance of his said promise made his last will & testament in writing some time in the year 1688 or some other time and duly executed the same in the presence of credible witnesses thereby gave & bequeathed unto each of the said five children of the said George Symes and Dorothy his wife 50,000 pounds of sugar apiece which is appraised as money or is used in the place of money in the said Island to be paid them tenn years after his death and made John Vernon his son his executor and died some time in february in the year of our Lord 1689 leaving the estate formerly of the said Thomas Everard unto the said John Vernon the son and also a very great real and personal estate amounting to several thousand pounds sufficient to pay the said testators debts and legacies with a great overplus and so the said executor John Vernon the son hath confessed and the said five children of the said George Symes and Dorothy his wife survived the said John Vernon. And your orators show that after the said George Symes' death and the said John Vernon the testators' death and whilst the said Dorothy was a widow the said John Vernon his son and Elizabeth the mother of the said John Vernon the son and Dorothy, applied themselves unto the said Dorothy and told her that the first assignment or conveyance being made by her whilst under age of the plantation and land aforesaid and the said set out assignment being made whilst under coverture it was a doubt whether either of them would hold good in law and therefore desired the said Dorothy to make another assignment or conveyance of the said plantation and estate unto the said John Vernon the son the better to induce the said Dorothy to do it told the said Dorothy that his father had given by his will unto her 5 children 50,000 pounds weight of sugar apiece to be paid 10 years after his the said testators death and

that the said John Vernon the son would take particular care to pay the same accordingly and would have and take great care of and do kindnesses for the said children and thereupon without other consideration the said Dorothy assigned and conveyed or confirmed the said plantation and the said estate formerly of the said Thomas Everard unto the said John Vernon the son all which would appear by the deeds or writings by which said assignments or conveyance were made and by the will of the said John Vernon the father now or lately in the hands of the said John Vernon the son or of some other person by him intrusted therewith and your orators the same to produce. And your orators show that out of the land and plantation or other estate so assigned or granted by the said Dorothy to the said John Vernon the testator and John Vernon the son the said John Vernon the son for many years last passed hath raised and made 2,000 pounds per annum and that some short time before the legacies became payable John Symes one of the 5 children died unmarried & intestate and that Elizabeth another of the said children was married to one Ulysses Athey to whom the said John Vernon paid her legacy of 50,000 pounds weight of sugar at the time it became due or within some short time after and that Henry Symes uncle and guardian of your orators and to their brother George Symes did at the end of 10 years after the death of the said John Vernon the testator or some short time thereafter on the request and direction of your orators and their brother George or in their behalf send a letter to John Vernon the son then and now in England and therein on the request and in behalf of your orators and their brother George (*who then were in Antigo*) demanded the legacies given your orators and their brother George by

the said will and the said John Vernon in answer to the said letter writ to the said Henry Symes that he has advised with counsel and that he found he could not safely pay the said legacies until the children came of age and refused to pay or to secure the same * * *

* * * * *

and your orators being in very low and mean condition and not able to compel the said John Vernon who is very rich to pay their legacies were forced to suffer very great hardships and have no education suitable to their condition and that after having suffered many hardships they came to England and have by themselves as also by their mother the said Dorothy and her now husband Arthur Freeman and by several others at several times made supplication to the said John Vernon the son for payment of their legacies and desired him that if he would not pay all yet that he would pay so much thereof as might put your orators to some trade but he refused to pay the same or any part thereof telling your orator Christopher he must go to sea again for that at present *he and his brother* were beggars and nothing of their legacies would be paid until they came of age or to such or the like effect. And your orators further show that in the years in which the said legacies became due and ought to have been paid or put out and secured for your orators benefit the price of sugar in Antigo 32 shillings to 35 shillings sterling of English money per hundredweight the cask then at 17 shillings of the like money and freight from thence might be had to England at 2 shillings & 6 pence per hundredweight and insurance at 4 or 5 guineas for a hundred pounds of the like money. But the price of sugar now at Antigo is 16 shillings for a hundredweight and freight from thence to England at 15 shillings per hundredweight and insurance 20 guineas per hundred pounds and cask 30 shil-

lings per cask or thereabout so that the sugars in point of value are not worth above one part in four of what they were worth when the legacies ought to have been paid according to the said John Vernon the fathers will and which your orators hoped would have been long since paid by the said John Vernon unto your orators or some in their having demanded the same. But now so it is may it please your Lordship that the said John Vernon the son being in confederacy to and with several persons unknown to orators but when known your orators pray liberty to make them parties defendant to this your orators most just bill of complaint with apt words and charges to charge them doth sometime so give out in speeches and say that the said Thomas Everard did not die seised of the plantation aforesaid or of any other real or possessed of any personal estate or if he did that the right was in Elizabeth the mother and not any right in Dorothy the daughter after the said Everard's death or if there was any right in Dorothy the daughter yet that she parted with the same for valuable consideration but is to tell what consideration and at other times the said Vernon the son gives out in speeches and saith that John Vernon the father did not make a will or give some legacies to your orators as before set forth or if he did make such will and give such legacies yet the same are not payable till your orators come of age and sometimes the said John Vernon gives out in speeches that he was willing to pay the legacies if demanded or could have legal discharge of the same whereas the said John Vernon well knows and so your orators charge that the said John Vernon refused to pay the legacies to the said Henry Symes and being asked why he refused to pay the the said John Vernon made answer that he was loath to part with so much sugar at the time

they became payable and at other times that he would pay the same at the price sugars now are without any interest on the same * * * All which actings and doings of these confederates do as your orators humbly conscious and are advised tend to your orators great oppression and will ruin if not prevented by the care and equity of this most honorable court. In tender consideration thereof and for that your orators witnesses who could of every particular fact as before alleged are gone beyond the seas and into places remote and all together unknown to your orators and your orators cannot attain to any copy or have any discovery of the will of the said John Vernon the father the said John Vernon the son refusing to let your orators have a copy thereof so that by those and other means your orators are remediless by the strict rules of the Common Law and only in this Honorable Court before Your Lordship and your orators hoping and believing that the said confederates when called on their corporal oaths will and so make to all and singular the matters and things before alleged. To the end therefore that the said confederates may true and perfect answer make to all and singular the matters and things before alleged as perfectly and distinctly as if the same had been again particularly interrogated and in more particular whether the said confederates do well know believe or have heard that the said Thomas Everard died seised or possessed of the plantation aforesaid in Antigo aforesaid and of what other estate the said Thomas Everard died seised or possessed of; and whether after the said Thomas Everard's death the right thereof did not descend or become vested in the said Dorothy his daughter or the right of some parts thereof and what parts thereof and by what means.

(The remainder of the interrogating part of the bill is omitted.)

And to the end your orators may be paid their respective legacies of 50,000 pounds weight of sugar according to the rates and price sugars did bear at the time the said legacies became due and payable by the aforesaid will of the said John Vernon the father together with interest for the same from the time the same ought to be paid according to the interest used to be paid and then payable for sugars due and payable in Antigo if the said John Vernon the son shall to pay your orators there or according to such interest as Your Lordship shall think fit the circumstances of your orators case consid * * *

And to the end your orators may have such farther and other relief in all and singular the premises as the nature of their case requireth may it please Your Lordship the premises considered to grant unto your orators Her Majesty's most gracious writ of subpoena to be directed to him the said John Vernon thereby commanding him at a certain day and under a certain pain therein to be limited and appointed personally to be and appear before Your Lordship in this honorable Court then and there true and perfect answer to make to all and singular the premises and further to stand to and abide such further order direction and decree touching the premises as to Your Lordship seems most meet and agreeable to equity and good conscience and your orators as in duty bound shall ever pray etc.

Wm. Cowper.

(Later Lord Chancellor Cowper)

Jan. 1705

The further answer of Elizabeth Vernon widow of the defendant to the bill of complaint of Henry Symes and Christopher Symes infants by Henry Symes their uncle and next friend and guardian Complainants.

This defendant saving as in her former answer is saved for further answer to the said bill of complaint saith that the last will and testament of the said John Vernon the older in this defendant's former answer mentioned is as she believeth in the words or to the effect following (that is to say) "In the name of God Amen the 12th day of February 1689 I John Vernon of Antigo being sick of body but of good and perfect memory thanks be to Almighty God and calling to remembrance the uncertain state of this transitory life and that all flesh must yield to death when it shall please God to call do make institute ordain and declare this my last will and testament in manner and form following Item I give unto John Vernon my son all my estate in the Island of Antigo with negroes, copper sugars money sterling in English. Item I give unto my loving wife Elizabeth Vernon one third part of the clear product of my estate. Item I give unto my daughter Symes her 5 youngest children now living 50,000 pounds of sugar apiece to be paid 10 years after my decease John Vernon." Witnesses present William Grate, John Browne, Anna Crise, John Jackson, Thomas Harvey, his mark. As by a writing purporting to be a copy of the said will ready to be produced to this honorable Court and to which she refereth herself appeareth that this defendant cannot affirm the same to be a true copy of the said will nor hath this defendant the original will of the said John Vernon the elder nor the probate thereof but believes the same is upon record in Antigo and this defendant saith that the last will and testament of John Vernon Jr. this defendant's late husband is in the words or to the effect following (viz.) In the name of God Amen I John Vernon late of the Island of Antigua but now living in the parish of St. James in the liberty of in the County of Essex Gentleman being weak

in body but of sound and perfect mind and memory and understanding for which I praise Almighty God but considering the certainty of death and the uncertainty of the time thereof do therefore make this my last will and testament in manner and form following. First and principal I recommend my sould to God in hopes of a free pardon of all my sins and to be made eternally happy through the merits and mediation of my blessed Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and my body I commit to the earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executrix hereafter named and as to the disposal of my temporal estate wherewith God hath blessed me far beyond my deserts I give and bequeath the same as following *Imprimis* I give and bequeath to my loving wife Elizabeth Vernon the sum of 500 pounds sterling out of my personal estate in England 200 pounds thereof I order shall be paid to her within a month next after my decease and the other 300 pounds within 5 month afterwards I also give her all her jewels and my plate the household goods and furniture to be disposed of as she think fit and I give and devise and bequeath unto my said wife $\frac{1}{2}$ of the interest of all such money as I shall have out at interest in England at the time of my decease and which shall afterward become due for the same during her widowhood after the deduction of her said legacy of 500 pounds and my funeral charges and I also give her one moiety or half part of the product of my plantation in the Island of Antigua aforesaid with the negroes and stock thereon which shall yearly accrue during her widowhood in and in full satisfaction of her dower and all other her demands in or to any part of my estate either real or personal subject nevertheless to and with the payment of one moiety or half part of the several legacies given by the will of my late father John

Vernon deceased which are as yet unpaid under the several portions or legacies hereafter given to my children and all with the payment of a moiety or half part of all such debts and disbursements as shall yearly happen and be expected in and about the same and I commit the care and management of the said plantation to my said wife during the time of her widowhood but in case she shall marry then and from thenceforth I only give her one third part of the clear product of the said plantation with the negroes and stock thereon for and during the time of her life in full of her dower and all other claims and demands in or to any part of my estate either real or personal and subject to and with the payment of one third part of the aforesaid legacies and the charges and expense aforesaid and from and after the time of such her marriage I commit the care and management of my said plantation with the negroes and stock there unto my loving friends and executors Wm. Matthews, Col. Rowland Williams, and Col. Edward Byam of the Island of Antigua or thereabouts and Archibald Hutchison Esq., Major Edward Nott and Nathaniel Carpenter of London and do will that they shall pay yearly to my said wife her said third part Item I give to my daughter Mary Vernon the sum of 1500 pounds unto my daughter Elizabeth Vernon the sum of 1000 pounds sterling to be paid to them at their age of one and twenty years or day of marriage which shall first happen provided they marry with the consent of my said wife but if they marry under age without my wife's consent then my will is their portions not be paid to them till they attain to their said age and I order the charge my said daughters education and maintenance till their said portions and legacies shall become due in case they continue and unmarried shall be borne and paid out of the product of my said plantation and the

negroes and stock thereon and other my estate Item I give to my sons Thomas and James Vernon the sum of 1000 pounds sterling apiece to be paid to them at their respective ages of 23 years and I do hereby order them to have such education as may fit them for the University if they shall be found capable and qualified to be so educated and in case they go to the University then I order 80 pounds to be allowed them apiece yearly for their maintenance there and I order 40 pounds to be laid out in books for each of them during their continuance there out of the produce of my said plantation negroes and stock and other my estate but in case it shall not be thought convenient to send them thither but to put them forth to some trades employ or calling then I do order and appoint that the charges of putting them forth to such trade employ or calling and also of their maintenance and education until they shall attain the age of 23 years shall be bourn and paid out of the produce of my said plantation negroes and stock thereon and other my estate Item my will is that in case my said daughter Mary Vernon die before she attains the age of 21 years or be married with the consent of her mother as aforesaid or shall marry before she attains the said age without the consent of her mother and shall afterwards die before she arrives to that age leaving no issue lawfully begotten of her body then her said portion shall be equally divided between my said daughter Elizabeth Vernon and said sons Thomas and James Vernon but in case either of my said sons Thomas and James and daughter Elizabeth shall be then dead having issue lawfully begotten then I order $\frac{2}{3}$ of my said daughters portion to go to the survivor of my said two sons and daughter and the other third thereof to go to the issue of my deceased son or daughter but in case such deceased son or daughter leave no such issue then the said portion shall go to the survivor of my said two sons

Thomas and James and daughter Elizabeth but in case both my said sons Thomas and James and daughter Elizabeth shall be then dead without issue lawfully begotten then I give all my daughters portion to my son John. Item my will is that in case my daughter Elizabeth Vernon die before she attain the age of 21 years * * *

(Similar provisions as to his daughter Elizabeth and his sons, John, Thomas, and James dying without issue under 23 years of age are omitted from printing.)

Item I give unto Robert Jefferson son of Samuel Jefferson of the Island of Antigua 200 pounds current money of that island which I desire my executrix to pay as soon as possible after my decease. Item I give devise and bequeath to my said son John Vernon his heirs executors administrators and assigns all the residue of my estate both real and personal but if he die before he attains the age of 3 and 20 years or without issue lawfully to be begotten then I give devise and bequeath the same to my son Thomas his heirs executors administrators and assigns he paying thereout to my said daughters Mary and Elizabeth and son James 500 pounds sterling apiece over and above their aforementioned portions at the respective times that their said portions are ordered to be paid as aforesaid * * *

(Provisions that if the respective sons and daughters die without issue before reaching 23 years of age.)

I give devise and bequeath all the remainder of my said estate both real and personal to the said Robert Jefferson his heirs executors administrators and assigns but in case the said Robert Jefferson shall die without heirs lawfully begotten by him then I give devise and bequeath all my said estate at Antigua to the oldest son of George Symes formerly of the Island of Antigua

and his heirs and assigns forever and I charge my said plantation and the negroes and stock thereon with the payment of the several portions and sums of money given and bequeathed to my said daughters Mary and Elizabeth and sons Thomas and James Vernon as aforesaid and I make my said loving wife sole executrix of this my last will and testament whilst she continues my widow and not longer In case she shall marry again or happen to die then I make my said loving friends His Excellency said Wm. Matthews, Col. Rowland Williams and Col. Edward Byam of the said Island of Antigua or thereabouts Archibald Hutchinson Esq., Major Edward Nott and Nathaniel Carpenter to be my executor in trust for my said children and other the legatees afore mentioned * * *

(Authority to executors to charge the estate and to invest income is omitted from printing.)

and I do hereby revoke all former wills by me at any time heretofore made and do publish and declare these presents containing 3 whole sheets of paper to each whereof I have set my hand and seal this 17th day of the month of June in the third year of the reign of the Mighty Anne of England Scotland France and Ireland Queen, Defender of the Faith etc. and in the year of our Lord 1704. John Vernon signed sealed published and declared by the said John Vernon the testator as and for his last will and testament in the presence of

(Witnesses omitted from printing, also denial that testator refused to pay legacies.)

This defendant saith that the two letters mentioned in this defendants former answer to be written by Henry Symes therein named to this defendants said late husband and to be in this defendants custody are in the words or to the effect following (viz.)

Antigua June 30, 1699 I have herewith sent our godson Henry Symes desiring you will forthwith bind him to some trade as you think fit and most suitable to his condition I have only sent the of sugar with him (two whereof is a gift of yours) received from Mr. Wadely; have consigned them to Mr. Nathaniel Carpenter and ordered the produce to be paid to yourself I have agreed to pay 6 pounds for the boys passage what you shall expend more in binding him or anything else, will repay you again out of the legacy of his grandfather left him since the unhappy parting of their mother and father-in-law this boy and his brother Christopher have with their schooling and clothes spent their share or what the childrens cattle was sold for so they have nothing more to depend on but the rent of their negroes which will hardly maintain them in clothing therefore believe it best to bind him to some trade whereby they may live hereafter. I desire you'll order your agent here to pay some of their legacies (which I believe now due) if should have occasion and with mine and wife's humble respects to yourself and good lady remain, Sir, your humble servant *Henry Symes*. Col. Byam does not concern himself so that all the trouble now lies wholly on me which is very disagreeable to my age and constitution but the brothers children and only have the name of mother it not being in her power to do anything for them (Antigua June 30, 1699 I have herewith sent our godson Henry Smyes desiring you forthwith to bind him to some trade as you think best and most suitable to his condition I have only sent 3 tierces of sugar with him, (2 whereof is a gift of yours) received from Mr. Wadely I have consigned them to Mr. Nathaniel Carpenter & ordered the produce to be payed to you etc. - (identical with first letter))

The above is a copy of what I sent to you by Henry Symes there is a general discourse that you designed to make void your father's will and not to pay the childrens legacies which I thought I was obliged to acquaint you with since it so nearly concerns your reputation and honor. For my own part I am not so uncharitable to believe that you ever had such thoughts so unjustly to defraud poor orphans and to dishonor the memory of your deceased father. I understand you have wrote to your sister and that Harry is with you I admire I had not a line from you nor from Mr. Carpenter concerning the receipt of the sugar since and several other London ships are arrived I desire the favor of a line or two from you in answer to what I now write in which you will much oblige your humble servant Henry Symes. The legacies were due this last month at Antigua April 11, 1700 as by the said letters ready to be produced to this Honorable Court and to which this defendant for more certainty herein refereth herself may appear and this defendant farther sayeth that the 2 letters mentioned in this defendant's former answer to be written by this defendant's said late husband to the said Henry Symes in answer to the said two letters written by the said Henry Symes as aforesaid are in the words or to the effect following (viz. 4 S to London May 17, 1700 I must confess I have great reason to ask pardon for not having wrote to you since I received

I was sometime ere I could resolve how to dispose of him for I wrote to your brother Richard here acquainting him with his arrival and desired his advise what we should do with the lad he very civilly excused himself saying he thought him in good hands. I suppose he feared there was a design on his purse strings. You desired the child might be bound to some trade I consulted about it with some friends who advised me that unless twere to some pitiful one I could not put

him to any but what would require a considerable sum to bind him out and also a good deal of money to set him up of his time which the boy's fortune not being sufficient for I thought fit to put him to school for about two years to qualify him and then to bind him to I must with him but then he won't require a start to set him up if he be but ingenious his fortune is already made I did not take of Mr. Carpenter's hands the money that the sugar made or I leave it to him to pay all the child's expenses till that money be done and then if you please he shall send you the account how it's disposed if there be anything of their father's estate coming to the children I shall be glad to have this boy's share sent home to help maintain him that he may expend the loss of his legacy and have the more coming to him when he shall be able to approve it you desired me to give order for the payment of some part of my cousins legacies I shall be sorry to have them reduced to live upon that part of their fortune that is in my hands and is their greatest I doubt I study the good of my sisters children and would willingly to improve them but if I must pay any part of them I can't do with good security to save me from being liable to pay it again hereafter for I am assured no person can discharge me but the children themselves when at age I wish my well married I shall then order her legacy to be forthwith paid I should be glad to know how you approve my intentions of disposing of our godson my wife of her humble service to your lady I desire she'll accept the same from me and that you believe me your
London December 15, 1700 I have received two letters from you since I wrote you one of April the eleventh the other of August the ninth in the former you tell me there was a general discourse in our island that I intended to made void my father's will and defrauding

sis [sisters] children of the legacies thereby given to them I should have returned you an answer to this long before did I not think that my letter of May 17 which I wrote you before the receipt of yours might very well convince you to the contrary and plainly discover to you the honest, of my intention all I shall say more upon this head is that the said report is malicious and false and invented by some enemy of mine to calumniate me and blast my reputation and I am glad to find by your last that my letter satisfied you as to that you say our cousin George and Betty are maintained by the rent of their negroes but that Christopher being a greater charge by reason you are forced not to put him to board and since you design to bind him forth next year you shall want money and therefore desire that I would order the payment of some part of his legacy as also of our godsons in answer to this I am very willing to pay any charge that is necessary either for the maintenance or education of my nephew Christopher which charges he can't avoid allowing me hereafter but what I shall pay to you on his account of binding him forth I must desire that you give me good security that it shall not be demanded of me again hereafter by him when at age * * *

(The remainder is omitted from printing as unimportant.)

without that that any other matter or thing in the complainants said bills of complaint contained material or effectual in the law for her and this defendant to make answer unto and not hereinbefore and in her this defendants former answer sufficiently answered unto confessed or avoided traversed or denied is true all which matters and things this defendant is ready to aver maintain and prove as this Honorable Court shall award and humbly prays to be hence dismissed with her reasonable costs in this behalf sustained.

Phipps

Martis, 30^m April 1705/6.

Henricu Symes Infant p Henricu Symes p chein Amy Quer }
Elizam Vernon vid Deftm per Billa revivend }

Upon the hearing and debateing of the matter *in queon* between the said partyes this present day in the presence of learned Co: on both sydes The substance of the pltfs Bill of Revive appeared to be That the pltf formerly presented his Bill into this Court against John Vernon the now Defts late husband Setting forth that Thomas Everard late of Antigoe who died was at the time of his death possessed of a plantason in North-sound in ye said Island and was also possessed of a considerable personall Estate and that after his death the said plantason became vested in Dorothy Everard his only child the Pltfs Mother and that Elizabeth the widow of the said Thomas Everard Soone after his deather intermarried with John Vernon of Antigoe, Esq., and Dorothy the Daughter by the persuasion of the said John Vernon and her mother Did Convey her interest in the said plantason unto ye said John Vernon and the said Dorothy afterwards intermarried with one George Symes and it being propounded that the assignment as made by the sayd Dorothy as aforesaid was not valid She being und. age when she made the same The said Dorothy was prevailed on to make a New Assignment And the said George Symes soone after dyed leaving the sayd Dorothy his widow and the pltf and four other children having made his Will in writing whereby he committed the Guardianship of his children to Henry Symes and others and the said Henry Symes alone tooke upon him the Guardianship and the said Dorothy and her five children being left in a meane condition and the sayd John Vernon being conscious to himself that he had wronged the sayd Dorothy in getting from her such

assignment of ye said plantason as aforesaid Did in the Yeare 1688 make his Will in writing and thereby gave to the five Children of the said George Symes 50,000 weight of Sugar apiece to be paid them ten years after his death and made John Vernon his Sonn his Executor and soone after dyed leaving a considerable real and personall Estate sufft to pay all his Debts and Legacyes with a great Overplus That Henry Symes the pltfs Guard at the end of the ten years after the said Testator's death Did send a Letter to the said John Vernon ye Executor then in England demanding on the pltfs behalf the pltfs said Legacye and the said John Vernon in answer to such Lre Did acquaint the said Henry Symes that he could not safely pay the sayd Legacye untill the pltf came of Age and the said pltf being in a very meane condition (and not able to prosecute the sayd John Vernon to compell him to pay the said Legacye) was forced to goe to Sea and comeing afterwards into England Did againe by himself and others apply to the said John Vernon for the said Legacyes but he refused to pay the same or any part thereof That in the Yeare the said Legacyes became due by the sayd Will the price of Sugar in Antigoe was from 32s to 35s per hundred and Caske at 17s per Caske and freight from thence to England at 2s 6d per hundred weight and Insurance at 4 or 5 Guyneas for one hundred pounds but now the price of Sugar in Antigoe is at 16s per hundred and freight from thence to England at 15s per hundred and Insurance at 20 Guyneas per Cent and Caske at 30s per Caske So that Sugars in point of value are not worth above one part in four of what they were worth when the said Legacyes became due and proposed that the pltf might be paid his Legacye of 50,000 pounds weight of Sugar according to the Rules and prices Sugars did bare when the said Legacyes became due and payable by the sayd Will with interest for

the same from the time the said Legacyes became due according to the interest used to be paid for Sugars due and payable in Antigoe was the Scope of the Bill presented by the pltf against the sayd John Vernon To which Bill the said John Vernon appeared and tooke a Coppy thereof but before any further proceedings were had in the Case the said John Vernon dyed but being sensible that he had injured the pltfs in not paying the said Legacyes when the same became due Did before his death make his Will in writing and thereby charged his Estate with the payment thereof and made the now Deft Elizabeth Vernon his widow his sole Executor and lefte at his death a considerable real and personall estate amounting to severall thousand pounds and the now Deft hath possessed herself thereof And therefore that the sayd former proceeding may stand revived and to be examined as aforesaid in the Scope of the pltfs Bill of Revive. Whereunto, It was insisted by the Defts Co: that the Deft by her Answer saith that she believes that the said Thomas Everard was possessed of such plantason in Antigoe as in the Bill is Sett forth and that after his death Dorothy his Daughter being possessed of the said plantason Did Convey the same to John Vernon the Elder for a valluable consideracon and that the said Dorothy at the time of conveyeing the same was an Infant but it being for a valluable consideracon An Act of Assembly was made in Antigoe to enable her the said Dorothy to convey the same to the said John Vernon and that the sayd Dorothy afterwards intermarried with George Symes and that upon her marriage and after She was 21 Years of Age She and her said husband did confirme the said plantason to the said John Vernon the Eld. who in consideracon thereof did give them a plantason in the same Island called Wakeing Hall which is now enjoyed by the said Dorothy and saith that after the death of George Symes John Vernon the

Elder the said Dorothy Symes whilst she was a widdow for confirmeing the sayd plantason to John Vernon Junior Did presente some other Conveyance of the sayd plantason for the consideracon of 10,000 weight of Sugar and believes that the said George Symes had such children and made such Will as in the Bill is Sett forth and confesses that the said John Vernon Senior by his will did give 50,000 weight of sugar apiece to each of ye five Children of the said George and Dorothy Symes to be paid as in the Bill is Settforth But denyde that such Legacyes were given otherwise than as an act of generosity and kindness of the children and admitts that the said Ma.^r Vernon the Elder left assets sufft to pay the sayd Legacyes saith that the usage of the Island is to pay Sugar in specie whatever value it was without any regard to the value at the time it became due and made those in Sugar as here in mony and believes her husband was never unwilling to pay the Legacyes when due to any person who had an authority or would indemnifye him That John Vernon the Younger this Defts late husband Did in the Yeare 1699 putt the pltf to Schoole and afterwards putt him out as Apprentice to a Stationer and gave with him 35s but his daughter and he not agreeing the pltf was putt to another Master to whome this Defts said husband gave 40s of which he received (?) 15s of the first Master and believes that her said husband expended 60s for the pltf over and above some Sugar which was sent for his maintenance and that since the death of her sayd husband there hath beene 20s expended for the pltf Henry and confesseth that her said late husband before his death made his will in writing and subjected his Estate to the payment of the pltf's Legacyes and made this Deft his Sole Executor and admitts Assets sufft to pay the same and is willing to pay the same as this Court shall direct but hopes noe interest shall be paid for the sayd Legacyes there hav-

ing beene noe default in this Deft or in her said late husband and that she shall according to the Laws and Usage of Antigoe in relason to Sugar Debts be obleidged only to pay Sugar in kind on the place of money in leiue thereof at the present vallue Whereupon and upon long debate of the matter and readeing ye proofs taken in this Cause and hearing what was alleadged on both Sydes This Court Decreed that the pltf ought to be paid the said Legacyes at the Medium price which Currant and Moechan (?) table Sugars cost at Antigoe from January in the yeare 1699 to Christmas 1700 with interest from the time the sayd Legacyes became due and payable by the sayd Will at the rate of 6 per Cent per annum in England and therefore this Court doth Order that it be referred to Edisbury (J) on ct (?circuit) to examine and ascertain what was the Medium price of Sugar at Antigoe during that time and to Settle and ascertain what the pltf's said Legacye amounts to at that vallue and to compute interest but the Ma.^E (Master?) is to make the Defts an allowance for the returns of money from Antigoe to London at the vallue returns then bore for the proving of which as well as the price of Sugar each partye is at libertye to examine Witnesses and the Ma.^E is to make the sayd Defts an allowance for so much as she cann prove to have beene paid and all other just allowances and what shall be found to be due to the pltf for the said Legacyes with such interest as aforesaid. It is Ordered and Decreed that the Deft doe pay the same unto the pltf and It is further Ordered and Decreed that the Dfts doe alsoe pay unto the pltf's his Costs of this Suite out of the Assets of the sayd Defts late husbands Estate And the sayd Ma.^E is to have the sayd Rights (?).

APPENDIX II.

PEDIGREE OF SYMES FROM VOLUME III OF OLIVER'S
HISTORY OF ANTIGUA*Arms: Azure, three escallops in pale, or.**Crest: A demi-hind salient erased, or.*

John Symes of Barwick=Jane
Admin. granted 1 Sep. 1563 | living 1563

Robert Hill of Yard,=
Alice Clark 1st wife
near Taunton, Co.
Som'set. Will dated 21
April & proved 15 June
1581

William | Symes of Chard, then of
Poundsford in Pitminster, Co. Somerset,
merchant, held manors of Barwick,
Boure, and Stoford, Co. Somerset, and
Franklin, Co. Dorset. Will dated 4 June
and proved 27 July, 1597 (66 Cobham.)

(26 Darcy)

= Elizabeth Hill
living 1597

John Symes of Poundsford, D.L. J.P.
b. 4 March, 1572, matriculated from
Exeter College, Oxford, 23 Feb. 1587-8.
aet. 14; B.A. 9 July, 1591; Student of
Lincoln's Inn, 1589; M.P. for Somerset
21 James I; High Sheriff; died 21 Oct.
1661. aet 88; bur. & M.I. at Frampton
Cottrell, Co. Gloucester. Will dated 5
Oct. 1658; proved 19 Dec. 1661 (206
May.)

= Amy, d. of Thomas
Horner, of Mells, Esq.

(Other Children of William Symes)

- [2] Henry Symes of Poundsford, matriculated from Exeter College, Oxford, 23 Feb. 1587-8, aet 13; B.A. 9 July, 1591; student of Lincoln's Inn, 1591. Will dated 19 March, 41 Eliz.; proved 15 June 1599, (54 Kidd.)
- [3] Robert Symes.
- [4] William Symes, a minor 1597.
- [5] James Symes.
- [6] Jane Symes, mar. Roger Howe of London.
- [7] Alice Symes, mar. William Hodges.
- [8] Elizabeth Symes, mar. William Mallett.
- [9] Mary Symes, mar. Robert Hendy.
- [10] Margaret Symes, a minor in 1597.
- [11] Margery Symes, mar. Jasper Pyne of Charde, Co. Somerset.

(Issue of John Symes)

- [1] John Symes of Poundsford Abigail, d. of Arthur Arscott, of Tetcott, Co. Devon.
- [2] Harry Symes of Frampton Cottrell, Co. Gloucester, Esq.; B.A. from New Inn Hall, Oxford, 25 Jan. 1630-31; M.A. 11 Dec.

- 1634; Student of Middle Temple 1628; died 1 Nov. 1682, aet. 73. M.I. at Frampton Cottrell (See Visitation of Gloucester 1682-3) Will dated 28 Jan. 1678; proved 12 Feb. 1682. (26 Droux.)
- [2] (Harry Symes) = Amy, d. of Sir John Seymour, Knt., of Bitton. She died 25 May, 1686 — S.P.M.
- [3] Thomas Symes, Senior, of Winterbourne, Co. Gloucester, later of Poundsford, Esq., 1667. = Amy, d. of Edward Bridges, of Keynsham; his will dated 7 Nov. 1638; proved 22 Aug., 1639 (143 Harvey). Thomas Symes and Amy Bridges mar. 1640.
- [4] Jane Symes, mar. Sir John Seymour, Knt.
- [5] Susan Symes.
- [6] Elizabeth Symes mar. Nicholas Martin of Co. Devon.
- [7] Katherine Symes.
- [8] Amy Symes.
- [9] Elinor Symes.
- [10] Dorothy Symes.
- [11] Edith Symes.

Issue of John Symes and Abigail

William Symes, aet. 6 months in
1623 at the Visitation of Somerset
(? Will dated 30 Nov. and proved
16 Feb. 1687, at Taunton
Also Grace Symes

Issue of Thomas Symes, Sr. and Amy Bridges

- [1] Thomas Symes, Junior, of Barwick, Esq.; matriculated from Christ Church College, Oxford, 21 April, 1657; Barrister at law of Lincoln's Inn 1666; bur. at Barwick 22 Nov. 1681, aet. 46 [?]. M.I. Will dated 18 Nov. 1681, and proved 14 Jan. 1681-2. (10 Cokle.)
= Merriel, youngest d. of Sir John Horner of Mells, Knt.; mar. settlement dated 6 Oct. 1666, bur. at Barwick. Will dated 4 July 1710, proved 26 July 1717 (145 Whitfield) See 'Misc. Gen. Her. (Vol. IV, p. 163.)
- [2] John Symes
of Montserrat
Esq. "Capt."
and member of Council 1678;
dead 1687.
- [3] Edward Symes, bapt. 1645 at Doynton, Co. Gloucester, living 1675 and 1712.
- [4] Rev. Charles Symes, matriculated from Magdalen Hall, Oxford, 2 March 1665-6, aet. 17, B.A. 1669; M.A. 1672; Rector of Compton Martin, Co. Somerset, 1674, Canon of Wells, 1679; bur. at Compton Martin, 1707.
= Anne, d. of . Creed of Salisbury, mar. license dated 21 Jan. 1686, then aet. 28, bur. 21 Oct. 1726 at Compton Martin.

- [5] Lieut. George Symes of Antigua, merchant; member of Council 1678; granted 260 acres in 1681; Speaker 1688.
 = Dorothy, d. of Thomas Everard; mar. 2ndly before 1717, Arthur Freeman of Antigua, Esq. Her will dated 5 July, 1721, proved 26 March 1737.
- [6] Captain Henry Symes of Antigua, bapt. 16 Nov. 1653, at Doynton; granted 100 acres 1682, Registrar of Antigua, bur. 9 July, 1714, at St. Johns. Will dated 19 June and sworn 13 July, 1714.
 = Henrietta, widow of _____, sister of Elizabeth, wife of Governor John Yeamans.
- [7] William Symes living 1675.
- [8] Richard Symes of Blackheath; married thrice, d. 27 May, 1728, aet 72. M.I. at Lewisham. Will dated 17 July, 1723, proved 20 Aug. 1728 (250 Brooke.)

Also

- [9] Amy Symes.
- [10] Catherine Symes.
- [11] Elizabeth Symes, will dated 22 Nov. 1675, then of Doyton, Spinster, proved 12 July, 1676 at Gloucester. All living 1675.

Children of Thomas, Jr. and Merriel.

John Symes, only son and heir, born 26 Aug. 1667, of Exeter College, Oxford, matriculated 20 March, 1683-4; student of Lincoln's Inn, 1686, died 6 July, 1685, aet. 20. M.I. in Exeter College Chapel. Rev. Charles' son, Capt. Thomas, bapt. 1689, fought under Marlborough.

N. B. The remainder of the pedigree applies to Henry Symes' descendants in Antigua, and is omitted as of no further value to this essay.

APPENDIX III.

WILL OF ELIZABETH LANGTON

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN: I Elizabeth Langton of Doynton in the County of Gloucester, Widdow-being somewhat sick in body but of sound and perfect minde and memory thanks be given to Almighty God for the same And considering with my self the certainty of death and the uncertainty of the time thereof Do therefore make publish and declare this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following (that is to say) Ffirst I commend my soul unto the hands of Allmight, God my Maker hoping to be saved and to enjoy the joys of Heaven in and through the meritts of the passion and Death of my beloved(?) Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ and my body I committ to the Earth from where it was taken decently to be buried in the Chancell above the steps there of the parish Church of Keynsham in case my Nephew Harry Bridges shall give consent thereto And in case my said Nephew shall not consent thereto then to be buried in the Chancell of the parish Church of Winterborne as near the grave where my sister Symes lyeth as conveniently it may And as to such worldly Estate as the Lord of his infinite mercy and goodness hath bestowed upon me I give and bequeath as followeth (vizt) *Imprimis* I give and bequeath unto my Brother Sr. Thomas Bridges the sume of Ffifty Guineas of lawfull money of England ITEM I give unto my said Nephew Harry Bridges the sume of Ffifty pounds of lawful English money ITEM I give unto my Nephew George Bridges and to my two Neeces Ann Powell and Elizabeth Orange the like sume of Ffifty pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen Arabella Bridges daughter of my said Nephew Harry Bridges the Sume of Ten pounds I give also unto my Cozen William Bridges his

daughter the sume of ten pounds ITEM I do alott the sume of Ffifty pounds to be spent by my Executors hereafter named in and about my decent Interrment and that thereout shall be given gloves to all my Tenants But in case Ffifty pounds shall not be sufficient to be spent in and about my decent Interrment my Will is that my said Executors shall bestow as much more in and about the same as shall be thereto necessary ITEM I give and bequeath unto my Cozen Edward Symes the sume of One Hundred pounds And I give unto my Cozen Harry Symes the sume of One Hundred pounds of lawfull English money ITEM I give unto my Cousin George Symes his children the sum of Ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen Harry Symes his children ten pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen Charles Symes his children Ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen Edward Symes his children Ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give and bequeath unto my Cozen William Guise the sume of ten pounds. And I give unto his wife and children Ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Nephew John Symes his widdow Ffive pounds and to his son John Symes I give Twenty pounds And to each of his two daughters I give the sume of Ffive pounds ITEM I give unto my Nephew John Meredith his children the sume of Ffive pounds apeece And I give unto my Neece Elizabeth Oranges children Ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen John Meredith the sume of Ten pounds and to his wife I give the sume of Ffive pounds ITEM I give unto William Symes Thomas Symes and Richard Symes sons of my Nephew William Symes the sume of ten pounds apeece and I give unto their sister Amy Symes the like sume of ten pounds I also I give unto my Cozen Elizabeth Hanis (wife of Mr. Charles Hanis) the sume of ten pounds and I give to her children ffive pounds apeece ITEM I give and bequeath unto my neece Kath-

erine Harris wife of Thomas Harris the sume of Thirty pounds and a silver skillet I give also unto her son Thomas Harris the sume of ffive pounds and I give unto her daughter Katherine the sum of ten pounds ITEM I give unto Mr. Joseph Jackson Minister of Doynton the sume of Ffive pounds to preach my funerall Sermon ITEM I give unto my maid servant Jane Galley one Feather Bed with the appurtenances thereto belonging and the green Cloth Curtains and Vallance and I give unto her alsoe the sume of Ffive pounds ITEM I give unto all my other servants that shall be living with me at the time of my Decease the sume of twenty shillings apeece ITEM I give unto John Still son of Henry Still of the Berry and alsoe to Ann Still Philippa Still and Mary Still his sisters the sum of ten pounds apeece ITEM I give unto Mrs. Katherine Stephens wife of Mr. Stephens of Easton in the County of Gloucester the sume of Ffive pounds ITEM I give unto Mary the wife of my Nephew Richard Symes the sum of Ffive pounds and I also give to Ann the wife of my Nephew Charles Symes the like Sume of Ffive pounds ITEM I give to the poor of the Almeshouse erected by my brother Sr. Thomas Bridges the sume of twenty pounds to be disposed of and distributed there at the discretion of the Founder ITEM I give to the poor of Doynton the sume of ten pounds the Interest thereof to be distributed by the Minister and Churchwardens of the said parish at Christmas for ever. ITEM I give unto Mary Symes wife of my Nephew William Symes the sume of Ffive pounds All which legacies and bequests and sumes of money hereinbefore by me given (I will) shall be paid within one whole year after my Decease (except such to whom Legacies are given that are not capable to give a legall discharge in which case I appoint my said Executors to pay them the Legacies by me to them respectively given at such time as they

shall judge may be most for their good and benefitt and the discharge of such Legatees or of their parents or Guardians for them shall be a good Discharge in Law to my said Executors But my Will and meaning is that (notwithstanding anything herein contained) in case my Nephew Harry Bridges shall not give consent that my Corps shall be Interred in the Chancell above the steps there of the parish Church of Keynsham aforesaid Then in such case the Legacy or sune of Ffifty pounds hereinbefore by me to him given shall be null and void And my will and meaning is also that (Notwithstanding as aforesaid) in case my Nephew Harry Symes shall not within one year after my Decease give unto my Executors hereafter named a good and sufficient release in the Law for the releasing and discharging to them of all rents and sumes of money by me received for Rent of Ffrancoms Tenement in Doynton aforesaid and all pretence and claims thereto Then in such case the Legacy or sune of one Hundred pounds herein before by me to him given and also the Legacy of ten pounds apeece to his children shall be null and void And my will and meaning further is That notwithstanding as aforesaid in case any loss or losses shall happen to my said Executors in the receiving and recovering in of my Debts and personal Estate or to any of my Estate in fee of which I am now seized and which I shall make hereby chargeable for the payment of my Legacies by reason of fire of houses or badness and insufficiency of Securities or otherwise That then in such case such loss and losses shall be borne proportionably by my respective Legatees according to their respective legacies herein by me given And alsoe my Will and meaning is That in case any suit or suits in law or in Equity shall be brought or commenced by any person or persons against my said Executors or either of them or by my said Executors or

either of them against any person or persons in about and concerning the receiving and recovery of any or either of my Debts and personal Estate or endeavoring thereof That then the surplus charges of such suite or suites which shall not be recovered had and gotten against such person and persons shall be paid borne and discharged proportionably by my several Legatees herein named according to their respective Legacies herein by me given ITEM I give devise and bequeath unto my Nephew Charles Symes and to my Neece Amy Meredith their Heirs and Assigns forever All that my Messuage or Tenement with the appurtenances thereto belonging now in the possession of Deborah Mathew Widdow scituate standing and being in Broad Street in the parish of St. Evins in Bristoll which I formerly purchased of and from Abraham Weare Merchant Taylor since Deceased But my Will and meaning is that in case my Debts and personal Estate shall not appear to be sufficient for the payment of the several Legacies herein by me given Then in such case that they the said Charles Symes and Amy Meredith and the survivor of them and the Heirs of such survivor shall and ought to sell and dispose of the said Messuage or Tenement and premisses for as much as they can gett for or towards the payment thereof ITEM I do fforgive unto my Nephew Richard Symes the sume of One Hundred pounds and Interest which he oweth me on Bond and doe appoint my Executors to deliver him up the same to be cancelled ITEM I give unto my Cuzens John Meredith of Mangottifield Esqr. Henry Still of the Berry Samuel Trueman of Durham and Thomas Harris of London two guineas apeece ITEM I give unto my Cozen Mathew Huntley of Boxwell a mourning Ring. ITEM I give to the poor of Doynton the sume of FForty Shillings to be distributed in bread at the day of my ffunerall ITEM I give to the poor of Keynsham or of such other place

that I shall be buried at the like sume of fforty shillings to be distributed in bread on the day of my ffunerall As to my household goods plate jewells and wearing apparrell I doe order and appoint that my Cozen Elizabeth Orange and my Cozen Amy Meredith shall give and dispose of the same to such of my friends and Relations as by any writeing under my hand I shall order the same to be given and disposed unto All the rest and residue of my moneys securities for moneys Debts and personal Estate whatsoever not herein by me given (my Legacies being first paid and ffunerall expenses discharged) I give and bequeath unto the said Charles Symes and Amy Meredith whom I do hereby make constitute ordain and appoint to be Executors of my last Will and Testament And this I do hereby revoke all former and other Wills by me at any time hereafter made and do declare this writing contained in three sheets of paper to be my last Will and Testament In Witness whereof to each of said sheets I have set my hand and to the last thereof my Seale this twelfth Day of February in the Eighth year of the raigne of our Sovcraigne Lord King William the third over England Anno Domini One Thousand Six Hundred Ninety Six Elizabeth Langton Then signed sealed published and declared in the presence of Joseph Jackson William Bruton Abraham Harper Martyn Noline [the words "one hundred" in the first sheet and the words "by any writing under my hand I shall order the same to be given and disposed unto" in the last sheet being first Interlined]

AND further my will is that my Executors shall on the Day of my ffunerall distribute to the poor of Doynton and Kainsham in each parish ffive pound of lawfull money of England besides what I have given them in my Will (to be yearly paid them) if it be not therein mentioned Alsoe my Will is that my

executors shall give to each of my servants that formerly lived with me ffive shillings only to Ann Tanner ten shillings As for my plate Jewells wearing Cloathes furniture of my House and household goods I hereby impower and appoint my Neeces Mrs. Elizabeth Orange The Elder Mrs. Amy Meredith The Elder Mrs. Philipa Still to dispose of it as followeth ITEM I give and bequeath to my Neece Amy Symes daughter of my Nephew William Symes my Green wrought Curtains and Vallens the best pair of brass Andirons in my Parlour the great silver Tankerd the red armed Chair in my Chamber two red stooles the Chest of Drawers and a little Square table all which goods were belonging to my sister Katherine Bridges as alsoe a looking glass which being broke I give my said Neece Amy Symes in stead of it my great olive frame Looking Glass ITEM I give and bequeath to my Neece Ann Powell my silver Bason that hath my own Coat of Arms ingraved on it ITEM I give and bequeath to my Neece Elizabeth Orange the elder my great silver Tankerd ITEM I give and bequeath to my Nephew John Meredith and to his son after him my great silver Bason ITEM I give and bequeath to my Neece Ann Still my pearle Necklace which I formerly lent to her And my Will is that my three above named Kinswomen Elizabeth Orange Amy Meredith and Philipa Still shall take their choice and what they think fitt of all the rest of my plate Jewells wearing Cloathes Furniture of my House and Household goods for their own proper use And that they shall distribute the Remainder of the said goods according to their discretion betwix my Cousins Amy Symes Daughter of my Nephew William Symes Mary Still Katherine Harris the younger Elizabeth Symes daughter of my Nephew Charles Symes and Theadotia Guise And I hereby order and appoint this Codicill (annexed to my Will) to be part thereof

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seale the Thirteenth day of January in the eleventh year of the raigne of our Sovereigne Lord William the third by the grace of God King over England and in the year of our Lord one Thousand Six Hundred Ninety and Nine Elizabeth Langton Signed and Sealed by Mrs. Elizabeth Langton and by her declared to be part of her last Will and Testament in the presence of us who set our hands as Witnesses thereto in the presence of the Testator the mark of Jane Galley, Joseph Jackson the mark of Hester Snell

P R O B A T U M fuit hujus modi Testamento, codicillo annexo, apud London coram venti viro Gulielmo Oldys Legum Doctore Surro: ventis et egregii viri Richardi Raines Militis Legum etiam (doctore) curia prerogativa Cantuarien. Magistri custodia sive Commissarii legitimi constituti vicesimo quarto die mensis Aprilis anno domi. millesimo septingentesimo tertio Juramento Caroli Symes et Amie Meredith Executorum in dicto testamento nominat: Quibus commissa fuit administrat: omnia et singular: bonor: Juri: et creditor: et fidele admstrando eadem ad-stram: sancta Dei Ex-angelia Jurat.

Note: The abbreviations are unfamiliar to me; but the gist of the probate is as follows:

Proof was made of this testament, with the codicil annexed at London before the eminent Knight, William Oldys, Doctor of Laws, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, on the application of the eminent and distinguished Knight, Sir Richard Raines, Kt., also a doctor of laws under the supervision of the master or commissioner, legally constituted, the 24th day of the month of April, 1703, on the oath of Charles Symes and Amie Meredith, executors in the said testament named, to whom was committed the administration of all and singular the property for the claimants and creditors. And for the faithful administration of the same he made oath. H. U. Sims.

APPENDIX IV.

GRANTS TO SIMSES AS THEY APPEAR IN RECORDS OF VIRGINIA STATE LAND OFFICE.

1. Book 8, p. 343, April 20, 1694, Robert Sims for bringing five persons into colony.

2. Book 9, p. 713, November 2, 1705, William Simms of New Kent, about 450 acres, escheated in 1702-3 from John Stevens.

(Note that I did not find the first grant to William Symes supposed to be in 1698 for bringing 19 people into colony. I suppose, however, it must be there, though I did not find it in the general index. H.U.S.)

3. Book 10, p. 439, July 11, 1719, John Sims patent 200 acres on Stone Horse Creek.

4. Book 12, p. 104, July 9, 1724, to William Sims of Surrey, 95 acres for bringing 2 persons into the colony.

5. *Idem*, p. 231, August 17, 1725, to John Sims of Hanover, 400 acres on South Anna River at mouth of Horse Shoe Neck.

6. *Idem*, p. 232, August 17, 1725, to George Sims of Hanover, 200 and 400 acres in 2 patents.

7. *Idem*, p. 352, March 24, 1725, to Matthew Sims of Hanover, 350 acres.

8. *Idem*, p. 353, same date to Matthew Sims, 400 acres.

9. Book 13, p. 69, October 31, 1726, Adam Sims of Brunswick County, 250 acres in Brunswick County.

10. *Idem*, same date, to George Sims, of Brunswick County, 270 acres on the south side of Metherin River, on Rattlesnake Creek, not naming the county.

11. *Idem*, pp. 104-7, June 17, 1727, to John, Matthew and George Sims, of Hanover County, 3,000 acres in Hanover County, on Locust Creek.

12. *Idem*, p. 313, September 28, 1728, to Edward Sims of Hanover County, 400 acres adjoining Sims' grant on south side of Little River.

13. Book 14, p. 86, September 28, 1728, Adam Sims of Brunswick, 250 acres in Brunswick.

14. Book 21, p. 456, August 30, 1743, George Sims, of what county omitted, 404 acres in Brunswick.

15. Book 24, p. 200, September 20, 1745, John Sims, 235 acres in Brunswick, north side of Rattlesnake Creek.

16. Book 27, p. 87, John Sims, 632 acres in Louisa.
Date: February 10, 1848.

APPENDIX V.

I. WILL OF RICHARD BULLOCK, 1764.

In the Name of God Amen I Richard Bullock of the County of Granville and province of North Carolina Being very sick though of a perfect sence and Memory thanks be to Almighty God and calling to mind the uncertainty of this life and that all flesh must yield unto Death whenever it shall please God to Call therefore I appoint this my Last will and Testament in manner and form following first and principally I give my soul unto God that gave it me and my Body to the earth to be Buried in such manner as my Executors hereafter naimed think fit in sure and certain hopes of Eternal life through the Merits of Jesus Christ my Mediator and Redeemer and for my Temporal Estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me with I give and Bequeath as followeth after my just Debts is Paid

Item I give and Bequeath to my Daughter Sarah Sims one shilling Sterling

Item I give & Bequeath to Henry Nandych one shilling sterling

Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Agnes Williams one shilling Sterling

Item I give and bequeath to my son Zachariah Bullock one shilling Sterling

Item I give and Bequeath to my son William Bullock one shilling sterling

Item I give and bequeath to my son John Bullock one shilling sterling

Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Susannah Sims one shilling sterling

Item I give and bequeath to my Grandaughter Ann Nandych one feather bed and furniture to the value of Eight pounds Virginia Money.

Item I give and bequeath to my Grandson Zachariah Nucholls one feather Bed and furniture the Value of Eight Pounds Virginia Money. Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Aggatha Nucholls one shilling sterling my will and Desire is that my Land on Ellibies Creek in Orange County be sold to pay part of my Debts and I leave the Land and plantation whereon I now live to my wife during her Natural Life likewise all the remainder of my Estate after my just Debts is paid. Item I give and bequeath to my son Nathaniel Bullock after my wifes decease the Land and plantation whereon I now live and after my said wifes decease Item I give and bequeath to my Two youngest sons Leonard Hendley Bullock & Nathaniel Bullock all my Estate except what is otherwise devis'd to be Equally divided between them and my desire is that my Estate be not apprais'd I likewise appoint my said wife and son Leonnard Hendley Bullock my executress and Executor of this my Last Will and Testament in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affix'd my seal this 27th day of October 1764

hd

Ric .Bullock (Seal)

Signed & seal'd and Declar'd to be
his last will & testament in presence of

his

William X Shaw :

mark :

Phileman Hawkins : Jurats

Julius Howard :

Granville County SC. November Court.

This Will was proved in Open Court by the oaths of Philemon Hawkins and Julius Howard subscribing witnesses thereto and on motion was Ordered to be Recorded.

Test S. M. Benton CC

North Carolina :

Granville County : Certificate of Clerk

This is to certify that the foregoing is a true and perfect copy of the will of Richard Bullock, filed in this office. There is no record of this will having been recorded.

Witness my hand and seal of office

This 18th, day of March, 1927.

(Signed) Mary E. Powell

Deputy Clerk Superior Court
Granville County.

Superior Court of Law

Seal

Granville

APPENDIX V.

2. WILL OF JOHN SIMS, FEBRUARY 10, 1765.

In the Name of God Amen, I John Sims of the parish of Granville in Granville County of the province of N. Carolina, being sick & weak of body but of perfect mind & memory and calling to mind the mortality of my Body and that there is an appointed time for all men once to die have made ordained and constituted this my last Will and Testament that is to say first and principally I recommend my Soul to God who gave it and my body to the earth to be buried at the discretion of my Executors. And as touching such wordly goods wherewith it has pleased God to bless me I give bequeath devise and dispose of in manner & form following:

Imprimis: I give to my son William Sims his heirs & assigns forever five hundred acres of land more or less within the bounds following, viz; Beginning where my lower line crosses Great Nutbush Creek thence joining Hargroves lines Bullock's land or lines and vandikes to the head of a branch called, The Long Branch thence down the same to Reedy Branch thence down the Reedy Branch as it meanders to Great Nutbush Creek and thence down the same as it meanders to the first station.

Item: I give & bequeath to Frances Keeling her heirs & assigns forever one hundred acres of land on the North side of the Reedy Branch Beginning where my upper line crosses the sd. Branch thence down the sd. Branch so far as to include the plantation where Agnes Keeling dec'd lived and to make out the sd. hundred acres in a suitable square form.

Item: I lend to James Wade Senr. and Dorothy Wade his wife during their continuance and their natural lives and no longer the use of Fifty acres of land joining Robert Mitchell's line to be laid off in a suit-

able square form & to include the plantation whercon the sd. James Wade now lives * * *

Item I give and bequeath to my son Elisha Sims his heirs and assigns forever one certain tract or parcel of land containing by estimation six hundred acres be the same more or less - Beginning where my line crosses the Long Branch thence down the sd. Branch to the Reedy Branch thence up the sd. Reedy Branch as it meanders to a large poplar blazed on two sides near the mouth of a small Branch thence a straight course to be marked to cross the path that goes to Hendersons at the first Branch and thence down the sd. Branch to Mitchell's line thence along Mitchell's line and my out lines to the Reedy Branch thence down the same as it meanders to where Frances Keeling's line markd off thence joining sd. Keeling's & my outlines to the Beginning.

Item. I leave the land that I had of Nathaniel Bullock to the child that my wife is pregnant with if it lives it & its heirs forever and if in case it should please God that it should die before it be of age or marriage that then the same to be sold and the money to be equally divided among all my children & their heirs.

Item I give & bequeath to my son Elisha Sims his heirs & assigns all my smith's tools & my Negroeman Sam also one bay mare that he has in possession and one feather bed & furniture.

Item I give & bequeath to my son William Sims my Negroe C- - Esse -d to him & his heirs & assigns forever also one young horse or Mare about five pounds in value at the age of sixteen years if required Likewise one feather bed & furniture.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my daughter Agness & her heirs - - - my negroe girl Amy.

Item I give & bequeath to my daughter Dorcas Sims my negroe wench Jane to her & heirs forever - - -

Likewise one feather bed & furniture - - -

Item I give & bequeath to my daughter Salley Sims & to her heirs my negroe girl Tamar Likewise one feather bed & furniture. - -

Item I give & bequeath to my son Lennard Sims my mill and my will is that my sons Elisha Sims & William Sims have their grain ground toll free at the same Likewise one feather bed & furniture - - - -

Item The rest of my children, To wit Susanna, Mary & - - - Lucretia Sims, & the infant to be born each of them a feather bed & furniture - -

Item I lend unto my loving wife Sarah during her natural life the four following negroes, Viz. Bess Jack Patt & Dick At her decease them & their increase if there be any to be equally divided among all my children save that my son Lennard Sims Susanna Sims Mary Sims & Lucretia Sims & the infant to be born shall have each of them a negroe apiece & the remainder to be equally divided among all of the - - -

Item I leave the money that is due to me from Mr. Richard Bullock's estate to be equally divided among five of my children, viz. Lennard Sims Susanna Sims Mary Sims Lucretia Sims & the infant to be born.

All other debts due to me I leave at the discretion of my executrix & Executor to support the contingent uses of the family as occasion shall serve - - -

Item My will is that at my wife's decease the stock of cattle hoggs & horses & likewise all the household furniture be equally divided among all my children -

Item I have appoint & constitute my loving wife Sarah Sims & Lennard Sims Executrix & Exectr. of this my last Will & Testament hereby disannulling re-

voking & abolishing all other & former Wills testaments legacies & bequests whatever.

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this Tenth day of February in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & sixty five - - -

John Sims (Seal)

Signed sealed & Delivered acknowledged
in presence of us

Robt. Mitchell

James Wallace

G. Sims

Granville County ss August Court
1766

'This will was proved in open Court by the oaths of Robert Mitchell & James Wallace Subscribing evidences thereto & on motion it was ordered to be recorded. Then Sarah Sims Executrix & Leonard Sims Extor therein named qualified as such which was recorded to be certified.

Test Saml. Benton CC.

Jurat Exrs qualified

Duly recorded Saml. Benton CC.

North Carolina, Granville County.

I, Charlotte Easton, Deputy Clerk of the Superior Court of Granville County, North Carolina, do hereby certify that the foregoing is a true, perfect and correct copy of the last will and testament of John Sims, as compared with the original will on file in this office, said will being number six hundred and twenty seven (627).

Witness my hand and the seal of said Court, this
7th day of July, 1932.

(Signed) Charlotte Easton,

Deputy Clerk Superior
Court, Granville County,
North Carolina.

Granville Superior Court of Law

Seal

North Carolina.

APPENDIX V.

3. COPY OF PAPER NOW IN THE HANDS OF MRS. ZEBULON JUDD, AUBURN, ALA.

This memoriam was copied from one printed in gold letters, and written by my husband's sister, Virginia Carolina Royster, oldest daughter of James Daniel Royster and a copy given to all the children of Susan Sims Royster. It is a copy of the same piece that was published in the newspaper. In those early days notices of deaths were sent around to the doors of friends to notify them of the death and funeral. One of these gold memorials is in my Mother's family Bible.

In Memoriam

Died, in this City, on Tuesday morning, October 25th, 1864, Mrs. Susan Royster, consort of Mr. David Royster, aged 85 years.

She was the daughter of Mr. Elisha Sims deceased, of Warren County, N. C. Sixty-two years ago she came to Raleigh a bride. All around the house she occupied were wild woods and fields. Few families were then living in the place ---- only one man is left who was here when she came, and since that time she has never moved. Her funeral was preached in the same room she first entered a bride. In the sixty-two years of her married life, she never left her home without her husband and children, and never more than week at a time, and in that long period she and her husband were never separated a week at one time till death, the fell destroyer, took away from the old man the "light of his eyes," and left him alone. She has left to mourn her loss 8 children, 44 grand children, and 15 great grand children, all of whom except 3 grand children reside in this city. Four children and twenty grandchildren have "gone before." One from beyond the Mississippi,

one from the enemy's land, and gory field of Gettysburg, and two from dreary hospital's on Virginia's consecrated soil. The others all sleep in the burying ground of this city. Mrs. Royster was of a cheerful disposition, even while drawing near the close of her long life, and suffering much pain. During the last few days of her life, her mind wandered from the present back to the scenes of her early years, and she spoke of the events of childhood, and the friends of her youth, as if actually before her eyes. She was for more than forty years a consistent member of the Baptist Church, and leaves to her large and sorrowing family, her example of patience, resignation, and piety, and the bright hope to comfort them that their loss is "her gain."

Hallie L. Royster
(Mrs. Vermont C. Royster)

Subscribed and sworn to before me
a Notary Public in and for Wake Co.
this 10th day of August 1936

E. L. Womble Notary Public.

My Commission expires November 14th, 1937.

APPENDIX VI.

COATS OF ARMS WHICH MAY BE BORNE BY THE SIMS FAMILY.

The British Encyclopaedia, 11th edition, Volume XIII, p. 329, c, says:

"The earliest known grants of arms in England by sovereigns or private persons are, as a rule, the conveyance of a right in a coat of arms already existing or of a differenced version of it." [The difference is a small mark indicating a later generation from the grantee.] * * * After Henry VI's time, "we have a regular series of grants by heralds who in later times began to assert that new arms, to be valid, must necessarily be derived from their assignments, although ancient use continued to be recognized."

And in Volume XI, p. 576, a, it is said that the heralds,

"* * * armed with commissions from the Crown, the first of which was issued in 20 Henry VIII, perambulated the English Counties, viewing arms and registering pedigrees." "To the heralds these visitations were rare opportunities of obtaining fees from the visited." * * * "The principal visitations took place in the reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles II."

Age, however, justifies many outmoded fashions. So the grantees of arms, although only from heralds, feel a pride in the ability to claim them by descent.

While the heir and his oldest descendants in succession probably have the only strict right to use the arms, any descendant, on proving his descent, and adding one of the small "differences", could probably have his arms registered in the modern college of arms in England, if he desired to do so.

But in America the proof of direct descent is usually enough to warrant using ancestral arms. So any de-

scendant of William Sims of Chard is justified in using his arms. Whether a Sims descendant of other grantees of arms, claiming through daughters of the bearers who married into the Sims family, should use those arms, depends upon the present rules of the existing College of Heralds in London; as to which the author is ignorant, and finds it difficult to inform himself.

1. The Arms of William Sims of Chard, as granted by the Herald Cooke, Clarenceux King at Arms in August, 1591, were: "Azure, three scallops in pale, or." See Volume 11 of Publications of the Harleian Society, p. 110.

This is a reprint of the manuscript notes returned by the Herald himself, and preserved in the British Museum. See *supra*, p. 5, Footnote 4.

When the crest was granted, is not known. Perhaps William Sims or one of his descendants merely adopted it. But that it was used during the Eighteenth Century by his descendants appears from the Antigua pedigree. See Appendix II, *supra*.

The crest there given also appears in Berry's Encyclopaedia of Heraldry in the College of Arms, Volume III (alphabetical). "A demi-hind, rampant and erased, or."

2. Arms of Robert Hill of Yarde, in Somersetshire, were: "Gules, a cheveron engrailed ermine between three garbs, or, all within a bordure, argent," granted by Cooke, 1570, to William Hill, grandfather of Robert Hill of Yarde, Volume 11 (*supra*) p. 50. Crest: "A dove, rising, azure, legged gules, holding in her beak an oak branch, vert, fructed, or."

3. The Horner Arms were granted to Sir John Horner, the half-brother of Amy Horner, who married John Sims of Poundsford. Her descendants are, therefore, not entitled to use them. For information, how-

ever, they were, "Sable, three talbots passant, argent. Crest: Atalbot, sejeant, argent, collared and chained, or." Granted by Cooke in 1584. See Volume 11 of Harleian Publications, p. 57.

4. The Popham Arms, evidently used by Chief Justice Popham's family from time immemorial, in Huntsworth, Somerset, were: "Argent, on a chief gules, two bucks' heads, cabossed, or Crest: A stag's head erased, proper."

5. Arms of Edward Bridges of Leigh upon Mendep (Somerset.) Visitation of Somerset, 1623. Volume 11, Publications of Harleian Society, p. 15. They were a confirmation of the arms of his great-grandfather, John Bridges of Combe, County Gloucester. "Argent, on a cross sable, a leopard's head cabossed, or, a crescent for difference," Edward being the grandson of his second son. Crest of Gloucester Bridges is given in Fairbairn's Crests, Plate 126, Crest 8. "A man's head proper, side faced, coupéd below the shoulder, vested, paly of six, all argent, semée of torteauxes and wreath around the temples, argent and azure."

6. The Everard Arms, borne by Thomas Everard of Meath were, "Azure, a fesse undee between three estoiles; Crest, A pelican seated on her nest." Probably because the Randilestown Everards were Irish, they were not in Berry's Encyclopaedia of Heraldry, Volume III; but were given by the Everard family to Burke's Landed Gentry, 4th edition, 1884, under Everard of Randilestown, County of Meath, Ireland. That genealogy starts, however, with 7 Elizabeth, 1565.

The lines of the families into which Sims men married after coming to America, have not been connected up by the author of this essay with the grantees of the arms in England, whose descendants came to Virginia. But doubtless the connection could be made with some

research. They are, Sherwood, Isham, Rice, Bullock, Henley, Howard, Mitchell, Moore, Brewster and others named in the preceding essay. Families of those names all bore arms in England prior to the emigration to Virginia of the branch connected with the Sims line.

[Faint, illegible text at the top of the page, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side.]

